The Department of Architecture
and Built Environment,
Faculty of Engineering

DEFINING PLACE IDENTITY: MISURATA, LIBYA.

Ibrahim Abdallah Shinbira

BSc. Arch, MSc. Urban Design

Thesis submitted to the University of Nottingham for
the Degree of Doctor of Philosophy
July 2017

DEDICATION

In the Name of Allah and all praise is [due] to Allah, Lord of the worlds; I dedicate this work to:

Those who have a special *place* in my heart:

My parents, beloved wife, and my kids

and

Those whom love to make good and meaningful places for a better quality of life.

ABSTRACT

In the last few years, there has been growing attention given to the weakening of the place identity of many contemporary cities that have grown up as a result of rapid development and urban transformation. For this reason, place identity has been identified as one of the subject matters to consider in urban design in order to achieve good quality for future urban environments. In respect to this, over the past four decades, there has been a spate of attempts to reveal a wider understanding of place identity, particularly in relation to humans' built environment relationships. To date, however, there have been relatively few attempts to integrate the concept of place identity into a more holistic theory of person-place relationship. Notions such as **meanings** and **place attachment** are rarely integrated with **the physical characteristics** in assessing place identity. Consequently, this research focuses on examining the influencing factors that are associated with place identity in the city centre of Misurata in Libya. This will be conducted using the three concepts of place as a multidimensional framework in defining place identity.

The primary aim of the research is to examine place identity in light of the distinctive characteristics of place through identifiable place qualities as seen by the residents. Therefore, it is believed that, a qualitative inquiry is the best approach for this study; however, the quantitative methodology was also employed in this research in order to validate findings through triangulating the data. Accordingly, the research for this PhD has adopted a mixed methodological strategy in data collection and analysis. The techniques (methods) utilised for data collocation were survey, face-to-face interviews and mental mappings. The data analysis procedure was a rational-inductive approach based on the grounded theory strategy (data-led analysis).

The research concludes that the main factors of person-place relationships (perception, meanings and attachment) significantly contribute to sustaining the place identity. The research demonstrates that there are seven characteristics of urban place that are strongly associated with place identity, as perceived by residents. These

are: imageability; visual quality; legibility; liveability; diversity; transparency and active frontages and walkability. These qualities were found as essential key performance criteria of urban place, evoking human perceptions and are important conditions for reinforcing place identity. The significance of meanings in fostering place identity was confirmed by seven identifiable factors, namely place memory; life stage and place meaning; historical knowledge; symbolic meanings; likeable environment; a sense of belonging and pride; perceiving urban change and place meaning. Factors associated with place attachment were the emotional attachment; functional attachment; length of residence; familiarity and level of engagement. The main findings of this study confirm that both physical characteristics of place as an object component together with the meanings and attachment factors as subjective dimensions are important for sustaining place identity and creating a successful place in general. This study adds to the knowledge of the importance of understanding the complex layers of perceptions, meanings and attachment resulting from the person-place relationship in shaping places and sustaining place identity. In this regard, it also seeks to be part of the foundation or criteria to guide and formulate better urban design policy and innovative design for the future of Libyan towns and cities.

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Last but not least, my deepest appreciation goes to both my beloved mother and wife for their continuous encouragement for me to persevere and successfully complete the thesis.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LIST OF FIGURES

LIST OF TABLES

1 CHAPTER ONE: THE INTRODUCTION

1.1 Introduction

Places change as an expression of the dynamic relationship between humans and the environment, and thus they are not a static phenomenon. However, places should have their own image and identity over the course of time. Today, changes are seen as a menace, as a negative evolution because they can cause a loss of image and weaken the meaning and sense of attachment to place, with the resulting of loss of identity in our contemporary cities. For more than four decades, the concept of place identity has been the subject of a number of empirical studies in a variety of disciplines, but there have been relatively few attempts to integrate this literature into a more general theory of identity and place (Cuba and Hummon, 1993a). Such efforts have been limited by a lack of studies that examine place identity from different perspectives and in a more comprehensive manner. More specifically, in urban design study, much has been dealt with concerning the potential of the physical form and activities pattern in creating successful places that still have their own identity; however, the significance of meaning and attachment to place have not been adequately explored.

The research addresses this critical omission by employing people-place relationship based concepts and principles. Furthermore, the research approaches this idea by employing the environmental perception, meanings and attachment to place. The significance of the concept is that the physical elements and meanings together with place attachment held by the residents from the place identity. Within this framework, the research focuses on place identity

issues, in examining the psychological aspect of the place and its linkage with the physical components. The selected context of the study is the city centre of Misurata, Libya. It seeks to develop recommendations and guideline strategies to address the problems of a lacking of place identity for the selected study area.

The focus of the research is to examine the place identity by taking account of place attributes and characteristics that strongly influence residents' perceptions, as well as the meanings and factors and characteristics strongly associated with place attachment. This research is vital for making successful places more recognisable and meaningful, and a place that inhabitants can feel attached to.

This chapter presents the introduction to the research. It is structured into eight sections. It begins by presenting the purposes of the study of place identity as a key issue in contemporary cities and defines the problem within the Libyan context. It will then go on to the formulation of the main research questions and objectives to guide the inquiry and address the research problem. This is followed by the relevance and scope of the research in the fifth section. The research strategy highlights the features of the case study and also explains the research methodology and process of the inquiry in order to achieve the research objectives. The final paragraph presents the overall structure of the thesis.

1.2 Statement of Issues

Global Context

In our contemporary cities, due to the increase the rate of growth of urbanization, place identity, recently, has become a common subject matter in urban design and among other fields (Bentley, 2004; Madanipour, 2006; Mashary, 2013; Massey, 1991; Perkins and Thorns, 2012; Rudner, 2013; Arefi, 1999; Arefi, 2011; Relph, 1976; Sepe, 2013). It has always been suggested that a lack of place identity occurs as a result of rapid economic growth of our contemporary cities producing a 'placelessness', and homogeneous places with

little real substance that reflects the uniqueness of a place formed (Relph, 1976; Arefi, 2011). Urban growth and changes in the context of globalisation have left places with an increased concern regarding their identity and local character. As a result, creating meaningful places is becoming more and more a subject of matter in the urban design in order to shape and reshape contemporary cities sustainably.

In reaction to the impact of urban changes and transformations that threaten our contemporary cities, there has been a spate of attempts to reveal a wider understanding of place identity, particularly in relation to humans' built environment relationships. A recent study by Cheshmehzangi (2012a) addresses urban identity through examining the temporary behaviour and activities occurring in the public realm, and Ujang (2012) investigates place attachment on the traditional streets. Shamsuddin (1997) seeks to understand the identity of place in a Malaysian context adopting Lynch's (1960) theory of imageability. Likewise, Stedman (2003) focuses on physical environment as major source of a sense of place production by addressing the level of satisfaction in relation to the meaning and attachment of defining the role of the physical world in contributing to meaningful places.

In environmental psychology studies, attachment to places has been considered as an essential element that establishes the person-place relationship (Lewicka, 2011). This author conceptualises person-place relationships through the potential of emotional bonds that people make with a place. In this respect, this study project seeks to examine place identity through exploring the significance of people's experiences towards their environment, including people's perceptions and place attachment. Thus, the research aims to fill a knowledge gap on place identity studies in urban design by bringing together the physical and psychological factors.

3

Locale Context

Libya is one of the countries undergoing development that has witnessed many changes in its urban make-up and faces a loss of place identity. The greatest urban transformation occurred in Libyan cities after the oil discovery in 1955s, when economic growth took off dramatically. In response to this economic growth, many Libyan cities have witnessed a marked shift, leading to a faster pace of urbanisation at both the levels of social life and the urban form. People moved from living in rural areas to inhabiting urban areas, and the majority of the Libyan population now lives in urban areas (see Figure 1.1). During 1970s-1980s, many large development projects were created by the former government, such as housing, traffic network, new infrastructure, education, health and industry (Abubrig, 2012).
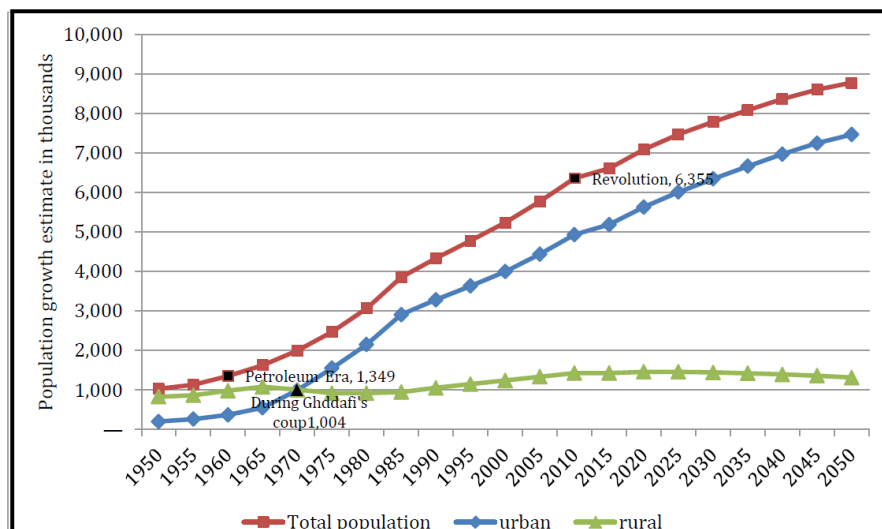
Figure 1.1: Urban growth between the years of 1950 and 2050. Source: Abubrig, (2012, p. 106).

In line with this trend, a broader pattern emerged relating to an architectural shift towards global characteristics. During the development process, many preparations were made for planning schemes (see Chapter Five), but these schemes were heavily dominated by a western style of architecture, which led to a dramatic change in the configuration of most Libyan cities, including Misurata. '*Western modernity has had a fundamental influence on the historical connection*

4

between the social and physical contexts' (Daza, 1982, p. 38). This is partly due to a lack of awareness regarding the importance of the local patterns and characteristics as well as the interest in large-scale projects with a western style that produce changes places at the expense of local characteristics. According to Akbar (1988) cited in Abubrig (2012, p. 12), *'the former government deliberately neglect urban design policies that meet the socio-cultural and behavioural needs of local communities'*. These policies have had a major impact on the transition from traditional and local to that of modern and global.

According to Ibrahim (1975, p. 32) cited in Elbendak (2008), the urban shift from locality to modernity has occurred due to: 1) the influence of modernization; (2) authoritarian rule; and (3) a deliberate government policy of national interaction. As far as the planning and urban design is concerned, this has resulted in the rapid urban centre development and uncontrolled transformation of urban fabric and, in many aspects, poor urban planning and policy have led to the production of vague urban images in the peripheral spaces of the city. *'Today most Libyan cities are going through a rapid process of development, which is changing their identity considerably, to the extent that there is a danger of a total loss of local identity'* (Shawesh, 2000, p. 57). With the absence of vision for urban development, Libyan cities have faced a transformation from the traditional to the modern, which has caused a massive gap in the urban fabric and the form.

Figure 1.2: The transformation from local (in which urban places acted as a social interaction) to modern (urban place prevailing by mobility large scale pattern, traffic) during the development process. Source: http://www.history.ly, accessed in 28/6/2017. The author, (2014).

Indeed, the most obvious reasons for these problems of lacking identity rely on the lack of planning policy and schemes. The decisions were essentially based on powerful forces of the political objectives rather than the basic principle of urban design. Moreover, it has been reported by many researchers that there have been no clear guidelines given to the planners and decision-makers to achieve the quality of place or to create identity (Daza, 1982; Shawesh, 2000; Abubrig, 2012). As a result, most Libyan cities now have an indistinct identity resulting from multi-dimensional issues associated with disorganised, uncontrolled urban growth, and contested visions for future urban development (Abubrig, 2012; Shawesh, 2000). As a result, most Libyan cities are now dominated by chaotic urban spaces with very poor identity and character. In addition, the current planning policy is lacking in terms of consideration of the detailed urban design qualities and clear storage for the development processes as well as ways to address emerging problems. Subjects such as identity, place character, image, and sense of place are rarely considered within the context of the planning schemes.

Accordingly, a major issue is that there is no clear vision or guidelines given to Libyan designers to achieve a more creative and better quality design of towns. In other words, at present, the researchers recognise there is potentially

a lack of attention given to the psychology of place and meaning for sustaining the place identity in Libya. In addition, the urban design practice has ignored the people dimension in shaping the public realms. For example, Shawesh (2001, p. 1), in addressing the issue of identity in Libya, observes that '*… a major problem is that we still continue today to construct architecture and urban forms driven from designs that are made by architects and planners who know little about the local conditions'*. Thus, there is a need to examine place identity in the Libyan context from its residents' perceptions and the meanings they attach to their environment.

Given these circumstances, it can be argued that the current problems in place identity in Libya are related to urban changes as well as to the lack of appropriate strategies to manage the impacts of these changes. According to the current condition, the rapid development of cities in Libya has failed to project a coherent image and the design of urban spaces in Libyan towns is somewhat lackluster. Therefore, there is an urgent need for the planners, urban designers, architects to give priority to helping to create an identity that is compatible with the town's geographical location, population, function and activities.

Prior to this study, concerns about the identity of place in Libya were also expressed by several scholars (Daza, 1982; Shawesh, 2000). However, their interest in identity related more to the expression of Libyan identity in the built form rather than human experience. Daza (1982), for example, was concerned with identifying the forces that have influenced the nature and the process of development. Using three cases (traditional, colonial and modern) within Tripoli city, Shawesh (2000) focused on physical and non-physical components that create a Libyan style in the built environment of Libyan cities - using Tripoli, as his case study. His focus, however, was the image of the central areas of the city in terms of building styles rather than elements and qualities associated with identity as perceived by the residents.

At present, studies related to the built environment and psychological dimensions (meanings and attachment) as perceived by residents are lacking in Libya. This issue is therefore addressed in this research with the aim of contributing to an existing body of knowledge on the people-place relationships in shaping place identity and it will use Misurata city centre as a case study within the Libyan context. For this case study, the intention is to determine the influencing factors (qualities) of perceptions, meanings and place attachment that are associated with place identity.

In short, this research argues that a noticeable issue for the urban places in Libya is the weakness of creating a distinct identity and designing places with indefinable character. In addition to that, it will also refer to the incompatibility of buildings' scales and appearances, the manipulation of facades and heights of buildings, the loss of spaces of traditional and cultural value, the lack of inner city attraction, lack of walkable places, the lack of interest of the built heritage as major public spaces and as a locus of social and cultural interactions. These alterations have affected the way citizens experience, respond and feel about their home cities and this may influence the way they evaluate meanings and generate attachment towards them. In this regard, Arefi (1999) argues that the lack of meaning and deterioration of emotional attachment to place is a result of the loss of place identity. Therefore, this research aims to fill the knowledge gab on how both physical elements, meanings and place attachment can support the place identity in our contemporary cities and towns.

1.3   Research Questions and Objectives

Considering the above discussion, the research questions to be explored in this research are:

Research Question 1:	*How can places evoke residents' perceptions?*
Objective 1:	
	i. To identify distinctive features of the physical environment that are associated with place identity.
	ii. To identify place characteristics associated with place identity.
Research Question 2:	*How are meanings of place perceived by residents?*
Objective 2:	
	i. To identify characteristics of place meanings associated with place identity.
Research Question 3:	*How can places evoke residents' sense of attachment?*
Objective 3:	i. To identify the reasons of attachment to place.
	ii. To identify factors that influence attachment to place.
Overall aim:	
	To examine place attributes, meanings and attachment to place as experienced by the residents and their role in sustaining the place identity, in the context of Libyan cities (see Figure 1.6).

1.4   The Scope of the Research

The study focuses on emotional (sentiments) and interpretive (meaning and association) aspects that based on person-places relationships and related to the cognitive aspect (identifying attributes and characteristics) to determine the

effect of characteristics and qualities in the shaping of place identity. In this regard, there are five main aspects to be considered in this study, outlined as follows:

(a) The place

As the centre of cities often reflect the essence of any city and they are always undergoing development and change, the study will focus on the city centre of Misurata, which is defined as a place expressing identity. The study will be restricted to the area within the Second Ring Road, known by the local people as the downtown or in some cases, the market 'Soge' as a metaphor for the predominant commercial character (see Chapter Five).

(b) The respondents

The respondents chosen for this study were limited to the perceptions of the citizens of Misurata (the residents) rather than the other categories of people such as professionals, visitors and tourists. Thus, only the perceptions of people who lived and worked (either since birth or as long-term residents) in Misurata were taken into consideration. Hence, local and foreign visitors were not included in this research. The decision to include only the residents in this study was essentially to examine the place identity as a lived experience phenomenon. This was seen as one main significance of this research. (See Chapter Five for further details).

(c) The place attributes and characteristics factor

In the context of urban images, the attributes of place associated with predictors of place identity, as suggested by the literature, are wide-ranging based on differing perspectives and approaches. The study will focus on and discuss only the qualities and attributes of a place that were identified and recognised by the population who participated in the study.

(d) The place meanings factor

The study focuses on the interpretive place meanings and associations in understanding the place together with the cognitive dimension (knowledge) to identify the influence of the place qualities that are associated with place meanings.

(e) The place attachment factor

A key aspect in the considering place attachment and examining place identity is to investigate the emotional, functional (place dependence) and the social bonding (socio-cultural). Although the emotional and functional aspects are more related to the construction of place meaning, the emotional attachment is also crucial in determining attachment to place (Stedman, 2002b). However, these aspects will only be discussed as factors influencing the attachment. The purpose of the study is to examine the influencing factors of place attachment that strongly contribute to place identity.

1.5 Research Approach

Place identity often relies on perceiving the environment's qualities as unique features that make it distinct from other places, and thus people feel attached to that place as it has meaning for them. In this sense, the research is employing person-place relationships and perceptions of urban places in examining place identity. Places are spaces imbued with meanings that people experience in them (Relph, 1976), therefore, in this research, place identity is examined through a

deep understanding of the complexity of place as it is experienced by its residents and local people.

Consequently, the notion of place is not restricted only to the physical environment but also is to giving more consideration to the human experience and the perceptual dimension (Seamon and Sowers, 2008). Therefore, it can be argued that the experiences and perceptions of the population is a key source of information in exploring the concept of place identity. Place meanings and attachment as psychological and cultural factors can positively contribute to reinforcing place identity.
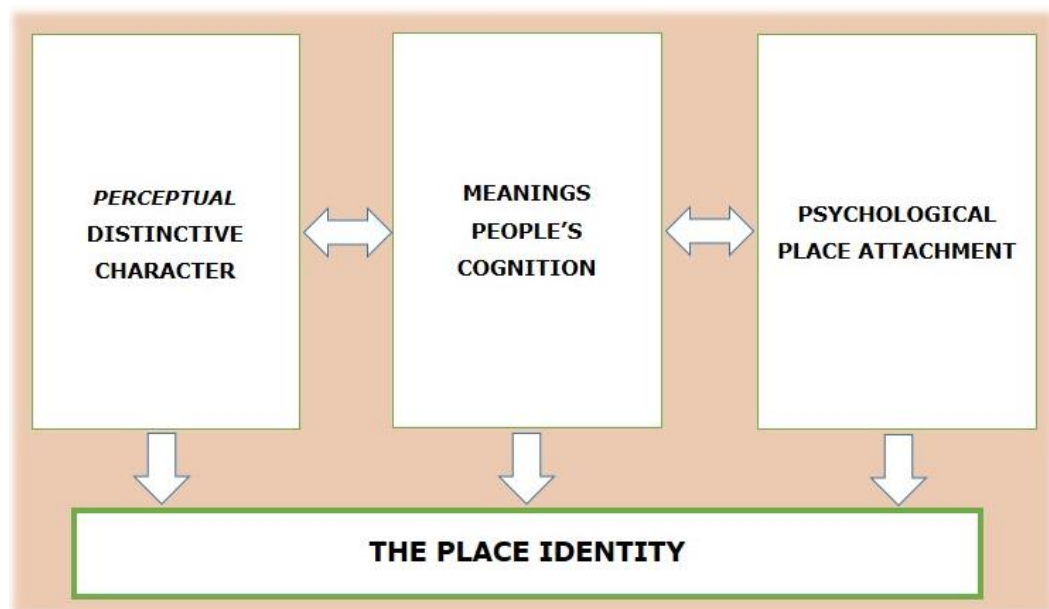
Figure 1.3: The place experience through the perceptual; meanings and attachment in defining place identity. Source: The author, (2013).

1.6 The Study Area

The context of the research is Libya with Misurata city centre taken as a case study. The area considers the core of the city where most growth and change has occurred. The city centre was selected within Misurata because the city centre is considered to be the place that best expresses the character of a city

and what makes it unique from another place (Madanipour, 2006). Misurata is an unusual case as most previous studies in urban planning and design have focused on Tripoli (the Capital city) and Benghazi. As such, there is undoubtedly a gap that should not be overlooked in the urban design research in Libya.

As one of the major cities in Libya, Misurata has played a central role in the socio-economics of other Libyan cities within its region. Misurata city has undergone substantial changes in recent years, particularly in the city centre where most originality is reflected. Misurata city displays many features of change in the built environment.

Although Misurata city is the third largest city in Libya, to date there has not been a single research study conducted in the city, particularly in the urban design field, as more attention has been paid to Tripoli (the capital city of Libya) and Benghazi city for previous studies. Hence, this is an unusual case study within the Libyan context and it is hoped it will be useful for revealing new aspects.

Places can cover a range of scales (e.g. home, metropolitan area, city, province, country, and region). Previous studies have indicated that places can differ in terms of spatial scale and they will therefore be attributed with different meanings (Canter, 1977; Gustafson, 2001). In this research, the place identified as the city centre district is the study area of significance in many aspects. The central district is the most intensely used urban place, which includes a variety of public spaces and places defined by various types of functions and activities. Lewicka (2010), in her investigation on place attachment at three levels of place scale - home, neighbourhood and city - noted that neighborhood was the best predicted variable for attachment, and so, city scales deserve more attention. In contrast, (Hernández et al., 2007, p. 310) showed that '*identity appears to be stronger in the city than in the neighborhood*'. According to (Lewicka, 2010, p. 36), '*about 70% of research on place attachment focuses on neighborhood, 20%*

on home, and only 10% on city'. This research argues that the city centre is a place where the image and identity of the whole city are formed from the earliest history of a place and therefore, more knowledge and emotions are evoked through the city centre than through the neighborhoods.

The area chosen for investigated is therefore that which is surrounded by the Second Ring Road. The significance of the places selected for the investigation as well as the criteria for the selection will be further discussed in the research methodology chapter.

Figure 1.4: The location of the city centre of Misurata and an aerial image.

A night scene shows part of Al Nasser Square. Source: http://misuratau.edu.ly/eng/city-of-misurata/ accessed 9/7/2016.

Location of the city centre. Source: Google earth/ accessed 29/4/2017.

View from Insurance Building towards Tripoli Street. Source: http://misuratau.edu.ly/eng/city-of-misurata/ accessed 9/7/2016.

Al Alee Mosque node, built on the ruins of old neighbourhoods Source: http://misuratau.edu.ly/eng/city-of-misurata/ accessed 9/7/2016.

14

1.7 Methodology

The methodology of the research is explained in detail in Chapter Four. However, it is useful to summarise the main considerations here. The research is based on the epistemological interpretive approach and the inductive approach to theory generation. Since this research is based on people's perceptions, it is fundamentally qualitative research. In addition, as this research is based on people's perceptions and daily-lived experiences, this further adds to the qualitative make-up of the research. However, overall, this study adopts a mixed method approach, applying several qualitative research techniques and also a quantitative survey to complement the qualitative part of the research. In addition, a triangulation of the data will be used to increase the validation of the results.

Data collection is based on several sources of evidence (direct observation, questionnaire, mental maps and interviews). Figure 1.5 illustrates the stages of work carried out for arriving at possible answers to the research questions and for meeting the objectives of this research. At the first stage, the research establishes a theoretical framework in order to guide the research design and the process of data collection. The theoretical framework is also critical for interpreting the findings of the data. A literature review of the previous studies by various scholars on the relationship between a person and their environment provides the theoretical background for this investigation. Four major theoretical aspects are reviewed: the concept of place, place attachment, meaning, perception and the identity and theories regarding the attributes of place identity. This review provides a significant part of the research as it shows avenue and a sign by which studying in the certain areas can be conducted in Libyan context. The literature review is considered to be a secondary data collection method in this study.

Documentary sources give supportive evidence for a case study (Yin, 2009), which were significantly important in establishing the general process of transformation of the city centre of Misurata and were also a key point in

understanding the patterns, themes, and issues of place identity in the case study. Another source of evidence was a collection of 176 questionnaires, which took into account the socio-demographic characteristics (e.g., gender, age, social class, personality, educational background and occupation) as a criteria for identifying the sample. This survey provided an opportunity to analyse the variations between features noticed by participants based on their socio-demographic characteristics as well as giving a significant background to Misurata city's residents about their environment. The outcome of this survey was analysed quantitatively using expressive statistics, namely frequencies or regularities and percentages via SPSS software package. For the qualitative data, the face-to-face interview of 22 participants using a semi-structured interview was conducted after the questionnaire. This data was transcribed, coded and then the main themes of the research findings were identified.

The qualitative data provides significant descriptive and analytical insights into the residents' perceptions and feelings. In addition, the mental maps technique was adopted in order to identify salient features of place identity. The features indicated in the drawings are based on the residents' perceptions and are considered important elements for achieving place identity.

The final method was the site observation method, which was used to generate information through observing people and their movements. It aims to record the presence and characteristics of the physical environment and human activities that contribute to place identity.

The data analysis process is established based on a grounded theory approach. Data analysis is based on the thematic coding of interview transcripts, analysis of the questionnaires, site observation, mental maps, and other documentary sources, which are based on the emerging themes.
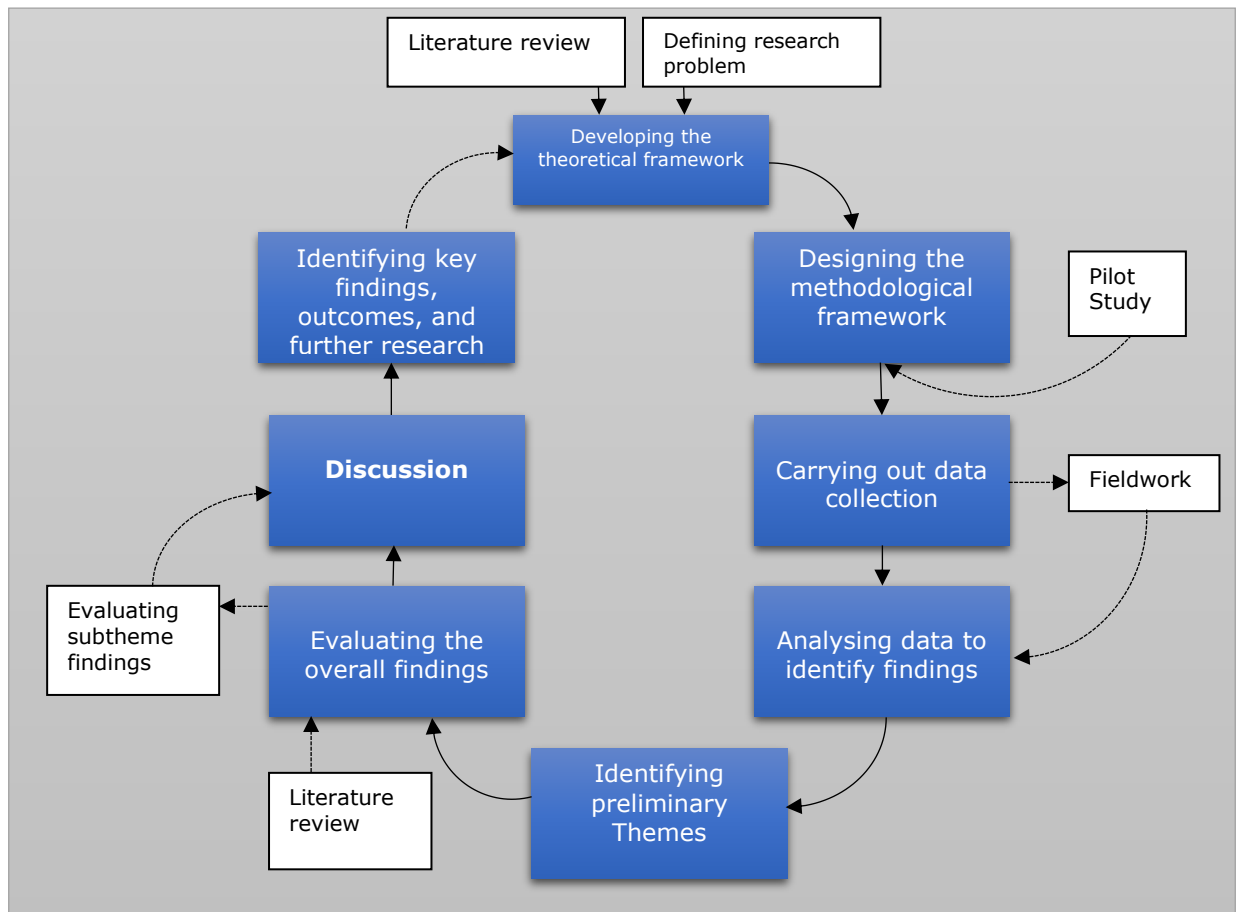
Figure 1.5: Stages of the research. Source: The author, (2014).

1.8 Structure of Thesis

The thesis is divided into eight chapters. The following describes the structure of the thesis and summarises the content of each chapter:

Chapter 1 presents the overall structure of the research describing the context of the study, the issues, research questions and objectives, research scopes and limitations and the significance of research to the knowledge and practice.

Chapter 2 presents a review of the literature relating to the subject matter under investigation. The concepts and theories of place, sense of place, identity and place identity are reviewed in order to define the theoretical foundation of the research. It also addresses the current body of knowledge on the place and place identity discussed in urban design and other fields of study.

Chapter 3 addresses the factors that influence the place identity such as perceiving the environment and how these factors relate to the concepts of meanings and attachment in the existing literature. It aims to make a significant reference for the findings as well as to establish the criteria for the place identity study. Generally, both chapters two and three provide a background to the body of the knowledge relating to place identity as everyday lived experience.

Chapter 4 describes the methodology of the research and appropriate strategies for collecting relevant data. It discusses the knowledge claims, strategy of inquiry, choice of methodology, and the research processes, which determine the appropriate research design and the way the investigation was structured.

Chapter 5 provides the background information to the case study (Misurata city centre, Libya). The analysis includes the physical and the social contexts, the urban design policies associated with the context, the physical characteristics, the population, the land uses and activity as well as changes and

improvements to the places. It then highlights the existing issues regarding urban design and place identity.

Chapter 6 examines the elements that are distinctive to the residents. The difference between the different parts of the town centre in terms of the presence of distinctive elements is also discussed. It then discusses the qualities that are associated with identified elements of the physical environment as perceived by the residents.

Chapter 7 discusses the main findings of the research in association with the second research question. It will present the findings of the research, focusing on the three key themes of meaning that have emerged from analysing the interviews, and supported by other data found in the questionnaires and site observations.

Chapter 8 presents the main findings of the research, focusing on the attachment theme and influencing factors that have emerged from analysis of the interviews, questionnaires and site observations.

Chapter 9 is the final chapter and presents the main findings of the research. The contribution of the study to the urban design theory and practice are also addressed in this chapter. Recommendations for urban design practice are made with regards to place identity for the selected context. Finally, a conclusion to the research is drawn and its broader applicability and suggestions are made for possible and further research in the area.

PLACE IDENTITY

How perception, meaning and place attachment are interrelated in promoting the place identity?

Research question 1
How can places evoke people's perceptions?

Research question 2
How can the physical environment reflect the uniqueness of place?

Research question 3
How can places evoke people's attachment?

DATA COLLECTION
- Questionnaire
- Interview
- Mental mapping
- Site observation

DATA ANALYSIS
- Identifying themes (interview analysis)
- SPSS analysis
- Perceptual analysis

FINDINGS AND DISCUSSION

Identifying factors of the physical environment.

Identifying factors of the meanings.

Identifying factors of the place attachment.

CONCLUSION

Figure 1.6: Diagrams of the structure of the thesis. Source: The author, (2013).

2   CHAPTER TWO: PLACE IDENTITY LITERATURE

2.1   Introduction

The existing body of literature on place identity is characterised by its multi-disciplinarity, which substantially enriches our understanding on this subject, but at the same time, also brings difficulties with regards to the integration of the various types of knowledge. This chapter attempts to conceptualise the complicated and at times even contradictory, conceptual and multidisciplinary discourses on the notions of 'place' and 'place identity'. It presents a review of a variety of studies from different disciplines and schools of thought pertaining to place and place identity. It seeks to establish an advanced foundation for the examination of the concepts of place and place identity in relation to this research.

This chapter is divided into three main parts. The first part presents the concepts and theories on place, and a component of place; it is followed by reviews on closely related concepts including genius loci, sense of place, place and placelessness and scale of place. The second part describes theories on place identity and addresses the discourse in the literature on this subject. It also establishes the connection between place identity and the two other concepts of meanings and place attachment as key factors considered in this study. The final section presents the conclusion of this chapter.

2.2 The Concept of Place

A discussion of the concept 'place' is a key element for a comprehensive interpretation of place identity (Relph, 1976). Therefore, this section attempts to address the concept of place for better understanding the concept of place identity.

Traditionally, place was not credibly written about until the 1970s with the advent of 'humanistic geography' such as (Tuan, 1977), (Buttimer, 1976), (Relph, 1976), and (Relph, 1985). Place is complex in its essence and, therefore *it 'is not just a formal concept awaiting a precise definition and clarification cannot be achieved by imposing precise, but arbitrary'* terms (Relph, 1976, p. 4). Despite the importance of the concept of place, it is challenging to define it concisely. This may to some extent be due the fact that there has been widespread interest in the subject from multidisciplinary perspectives, and so the term 'place' embodies multitudinous meanings in different disciplines, thus rendering a precise definition of the term 'place' elusive (e.g., Sime, 1986; Patterson and Williams, 2005). As a consequence, this section does not seek to find a precise definition of the concept of place, rather it hopes to detail the link between place and identity.

A review of related literature suggests that there are two broad differences in understanding the concept of place: on the one hand, place is used to explore the materiality, location and the physical characteristics that make up the character of a specific place, which has traditionally been the main discourse (Norberg-Schulz, 1976). This position sees places as objectively formed. On the other hand, a place has been understood to lay greater emphasis on the human's experiences and feelings, meaning places are also both psychologically and socially constructed. This trend has been growing over the last four decades since phenomenological geographers Tuan (1977); Relph (1976); Buttimer (1976) and Seamon (1982) first realised the importance of exploring the concept of place in terms of its everyday lived experience.

According to Relph (1976), place is a basic feature of human experience, and individuals can be influenced by experiencing a place. He also argued that there are two important reasons for considering a place in terms of the experienced phenomenon. The first reason is because human expression is an output of their involvement with the world, and the second is because the knowledge of it helps to maintain and manipulate existing places as well as the creation of new places. In this respect, defining a place by approaching it from human experience (i.e. people's perceptions) may lead to a more accurate understanding of the urban changes and urban identity of a particular place.

In short, in the context of environmental design, a place is predominantly understood in terms of objectivism (i.e., interpreting places as a physical setting outside experience). However, particularly those who are concerned with the psychological aspects of a man-environment relationship define places as subjectivist (i.e. interpreting place based on human experience, conjuring up a feeling of belonging, inside experience) (see Figure 2.1).

Relatively, places, as argued by Seamon (2011), could be understood as a result of incorporating a lived experience and process whereby human beings endure and are output by the environment in which they find themselves. Following these two trends, therefore, a phenomenological perspective seems valuable because one of its core aims is identifying the essential structure of place through human life that would give to it coherence and continuity (Moran, 2001; Seamon, 2000; Finlay, 2012).
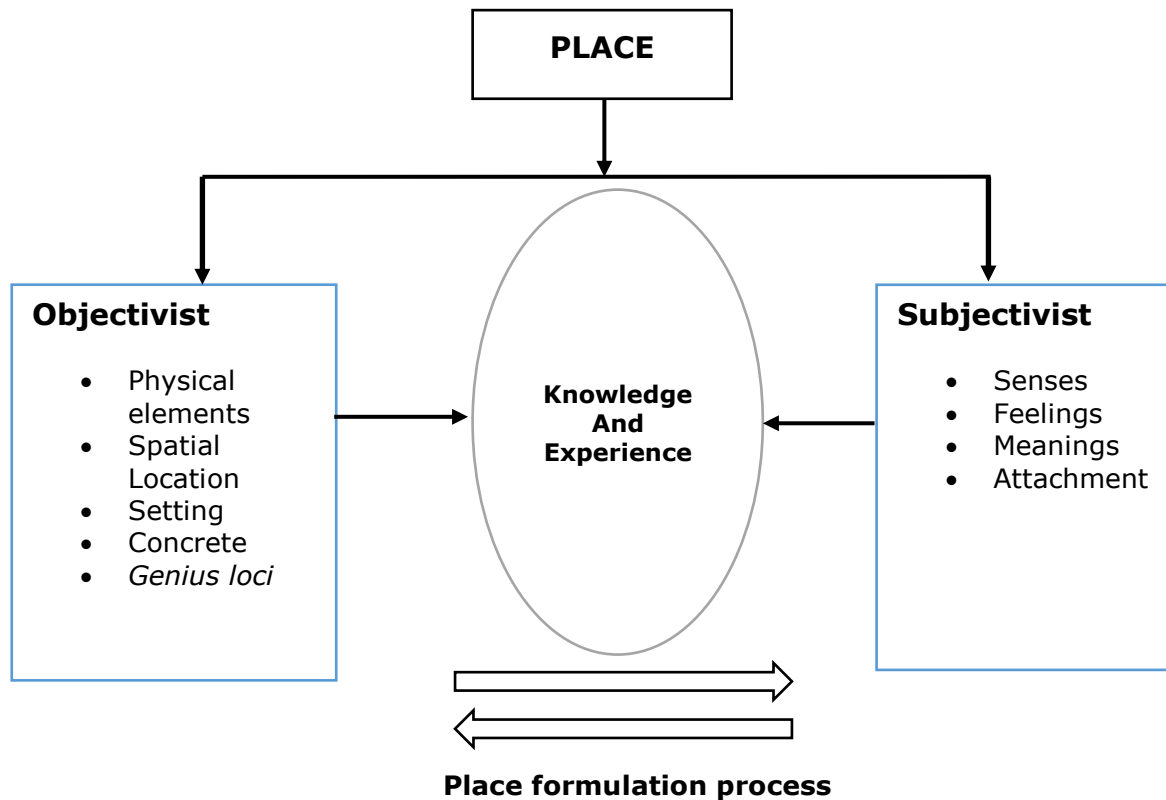
Figure 2.1: The concept of place adopted from Seamon (2011).

At this point, it can be argued that place is not defined as a geographical space (objects), but also as a (subjective) term, which has developed meaning through lived experience and interaction in the space. Moreover, place is rich in meaning and has connotations related to physical activity (Canter, 1977). Thus, henceforth place will be taken not just as an abstract location or as a physical attribute but also as an embodiment of human experience, memory, emotion, and knowledge. '*We should take seriously the account of places. They are not a superficial commentary removed from feelings and actions: they are an integral part of our experience even if we cannot fully articulate that experience in words'* (Canter, 1977, p. 124). The next section describes these elements as explained by several scholars in more detail.

2.3   The Components of Place

Over the past four decades, most research in place has suggested three major components of place: the physical form, activity and meaning (Canter, 1977; Relph, 1976; Montgomery, 1998). Canter (1977, p. 160) argues that place is a result *'of the relationship between actions, conception and physical attributes'*. From geographical and psychological perspectives, place is mainly defined as more akin to the meaning dimension (Tuan, 1977). However, in the environmental design context, places are referred to as a physical setting. Canter (1977) went further in his point when he argued that physical attributes have a significant influence on psychological and behavioural processes of the 'users'. According to Canter (1977), individuals conceptualise places according to their socio-cultural needs and '*it is, therefore, important to consider places from the perspective of their users'* (Gustafson, 2001, p. 6).

Although Relph (1976) and Canter (1977) both come from different disciplines and different scientific traditions, both of them during their study on the `basic elements' or `constituents' of place, arrive at similar important theoretical models of place (Sime, 1986; Groat, 1995). However, Canter (1977), a psychologist, sees place as a `technical term' and considers Relph's (1976) idea of place to be `romantic' (Gustafson, 2001, p. 6).

Taylor (1993), Ryden (1993, p. 37-38) and Steadman (2003) observed the potential of physical features in the creation of place meanings. They noted that the sense of place is not only produced simply by the physical elements, but also by the symbolic meanings that are embodied by them, which are in turn associated with the establishment of the asset of place attachment. Ryden (1993, pp. 37-38), for example, argues that *'a place …takes in the meanings, which people assign to that landscape through the process of living in it'*. At this point, meanings could refer to perceptual and psychological factors of the environment as experienced by people (Relph, 1976; Stokols and Shumaker, 1981; Stedman, 2002b; Smaldone et al., 2005). The components of place are shown in Figure 2.2.

In most research, these three components are seen to mutually constitute the essence of place and its associations such as place identity, even though, in most cases, one of these three components of place tends to predominate (Gu and Ryan, 2008). Moreover, the model of place (see Figure 2.2) encountered in the literature has tended to range from highly theoretical to empirically rooted in the different disciplines. However, these constructs still need further clarification (Stedman, 2002). A number of frameworks have been set forth to help explain the creation of places, their meanings, and their connections to people (Low and Altman, 1992; Hay, 1998; Gustafson, 2001).

COMPONENTS OF PLACE

PHYSICAL FORM

ACTIVITY

PLACE

MEANING
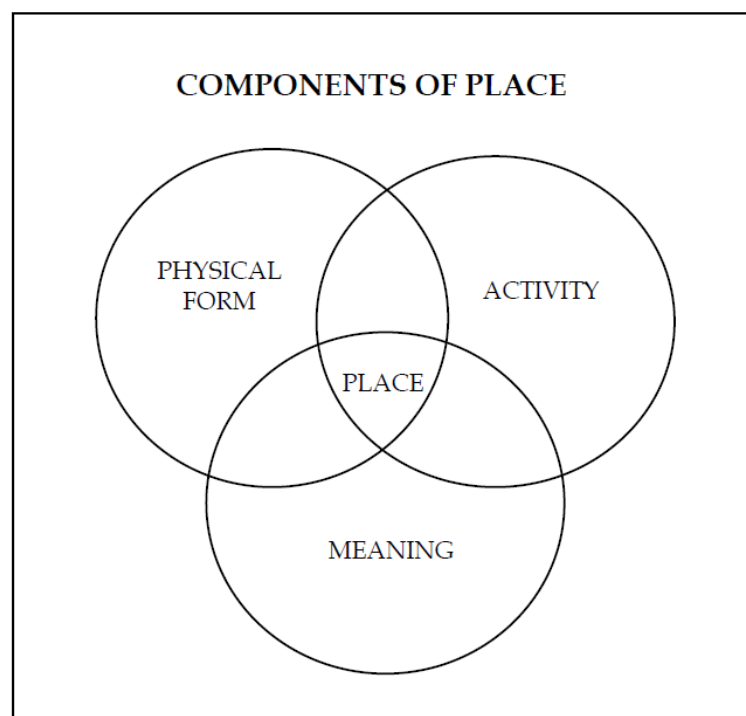
Figure 2.2: the components of place. Source: Montgomery (1998, p. 96).

Furthermore, one of the prominent authors who has made a major contribution to the phenomenon of place is the philosopher Norberg-Schulz (1976). Drawing on the earlier essay of Heidegger: 'Building Dwelling Thinking', Norberg-Schulz (1976) had espoused a theory of place, which emphasises the way people can find meaning in *the physical features*. He argues that the concept of place as an entirely made up of concrete things having material substance,

shape, texture and colour. This suggests that, in architectural theorising, the term place has been viewed as being purely empty of actions, i.e. it appears to present the place notion as geometry abstracted in favour of immateriality.

The character is determined by the formal materiality that structures the place and is determined by how things are (meanings) and gives our investigations a basis in the concrete phenomena of our everyday life (activity). Hence, the character of place denotes the total atmosphere of place including the comprehensible materiality more than social connotations. This idea focuses on how *'people receive sensory material about the physical world'* (Larice and Macdonald, 2013, p. 272). Similarly, Gieryn (2000) argues that the place should consist of three topographies: geographical location, physical features and meanings or values. '*Places are also interpreted, narrated, perceived, felt, understood, and imagined'* (Ujang and Zakariya, 2015a, p. 710). The research argues that considering people as an integral part of a place is important for evaluating its quality.

For other scholars, the *social (activities)* and *meaning*s dimensions have a significant contribution to the sense of place more than the physical features (Carmona et al., 2010). Similarly, Seamon and Sowers (2008) describe the place as mainly constructed through social actions and interactions. In many cases, it has been accepted that it is people who make places by giving those places meaning, and thus people transform them from empty spaces into identifiable places (Ryden, 1993). In this sense, the physical features constitute a place or engender physical characteristics as imagined by observers, which in turn, determine the meanings of these attractions based on their awareness. This is also supported by Tuan (1977) who constantly argues that place becomes more meaningful through 'lived experience'. This suggests that in a wider sense the establishment of place is that people receive the meanings of the physical spatiality after they are constructed through their interaction and use of that built environment. Thus, physical features make significant contributions to place meaning (Twigger-Ross and Uzzell, 1996; Stedman, 2003). This suggests that

meaning and the physical components influence place character and identity. Hence, it is important to consider the significance of the physical environment people are aware of in creating and redeploying places.

This research argues that place identity is a product of human experience in response to their surrounding environment. In urban design, however, much attention has been given to sustaining the physical environment meanings and other psychological (i.e. emotional attachment) dimensions that have not been identified with such emphasis. Though much has been studied as regards the physical and the activity associated with the quality of the environment, the effects of place meanings and attachment on people's perceptions of the place have not been brought to attention. The emerging question arises as to how significant the affective aspects of perception are that influence how people perceive the character and identity of place. Notably, there is a knowledge gap between place meaning and the physical components of place as perceived by the people. The study seeks to examine how these components intertwine in the urban experience of a specific cultural context and its significance in enhancing place identity.

Therefore, it is important to integrate *the psychological dimension* in the framework of place quality in examining the place identity so the construction of place is based on the physical as well as the social and psychological components. The following sections extend the term place beyond the physical environment to the experience of people.

2.3.1 'Spirit of Place' Genius Loci

Adopting the Roman concept of *'genius loci'*, Norberg-Schulz (1976), argues that *'genius loci'* is necessary for place identity. He asserts that places would lose their identity if they were not planned by considering the genius loci. Hence, *'genius loci is described as representing the sense people have of a place, understood as the sum of all physical as well as symbolic values in nature and the human environment'* (p. 45). According to this theory, places would lose their

identity if they were not planned with consideration of the genius loci. Yet, there is much explanation still needed regarding how exactly they are interrelated in the creation of place.

Initially, spirit of place was often referred to as 'a meaningful location' (Cresswell, 2004) or 'territories of meaning' (Tuan, 1977). Cresswell (2004) identifies three aspects that conceptualise the meaningful location including 'a meaningful location', which is characterised by three main aspects:

a) 'location', referring to the coordinates and measurable distance of a particular space,

b) 'local', referring to a visible physical element for social relations, and

c) 'sense of place', referring to meanings associated with a place, such as feelings and emotions whether individually or shared.

Similarly, Agnew and Duncan (1989) cited from Gustafson (2001) in their study of places consider the locals as daily life social interaction, while they saw the sense of place as the location or space for social activities. In this respect, the sense of place is constructed by the social aspects rather than the physical form. In a similar way, Arefi (1999) argues that locality deals with the social dimension, while location relates to an economic transaction, and sense of place emphasises the emotional feeling towards places. Therefore, places are not just a set of objects positioned in a set in order to make up a part of a city or a territory; rather, places are also assumed to hold a specific meaning in the time in which we imbue them with social values.

In architectural theorising, however, the sense of place generated by spirit is often reduced to urban image and form as being purely empty of actions, i.e. it appears to present the place notion as geometry abstracted in favour of immateriality. This suggests that in the wider sense in the establishment of place people receive the meanings of the physical spatiality after they have been constructed through their interaction and use of that built environment. Thus, the physical features are the main constitution of place or production of feelings

of place, the 'spirit' or 'sense' of place, meaning that physical characteristics provide the observers the image, which in turn determines the meanings of these attractions based on their awareness.

In this regard, Norberg-Schulz (1976) suggests three significant and interrelated concepts define the spirit of place: 'character', 'identity' and 'genius loci'. According to him, the character is determined by the formal materiality that structures the place and is determined by how things are and gives our investigations a basis in the concrete phenomena of our everyday life. Hence, the character of place denotes the total atmosphere of place including the comprehensible materiality more than social connotations. His idea focuses on how *'people receive sensory material about the physical world'* (Larice and Macdonald, 2013, p. 272). Meanwhile, the genius loci are the spirit that gives life to places and are strongly associated with 'dwelling'. In essence, the role of physical environment or architecture is *'to concretize the genius loci'* (Sime, 1986, p. 51).

The character is related to the atmosphere, which is also understood as the quality of the environment that has its own spirit of place (Jiveˊn and Larkham, 2003) that gives life to places and determines their character. In their remarkable books, *'The Timeless Way of Building'* (Alexander, 1979) and *'A Pattern Language'* (Alexander et al., 1977), they describe the place as a reaffirmation of the architectural significance, concerning more the design and planning. For example, they emphasise the physical features that constitute assumptions of a place and generate feelings of place or genius loci or, as they have been called, 'quality without a name'.

Place character and genius loci are also discussed in relation to place authenticity (Jiveˊn and Larkham, 2003). The literature shows that it is often believed that genus loci exist and are present in historical places. Therefore, many authors argue that historical places have a strong sense of place more than modern ones (Ouf, 2001; Gospodini, 2004; Ginting and Wahid, 2015). A good example illustrating this idea is Ouf's (2001) work exploring genius loci as a

source of place identity and through his emphasis on historical features, he (2001) argues that the concept of 'authenticity' can be used to achieve the genius loci in designing new places. This implies that in order to generate genius loci we need to reuse some considerable historical features in creating new places and design. However, perhaps this is not the only case.

Jive´n and Larkham (2003, p. 98) criticise Ouf's (2001) work, arguing that it is merely '*…the individuals and society that integrate these features through their values system to form a sense of place.* […] *Yet the values and attitudes of individuals and of societies change over time. What is not valued now may well be valued in the future, and vice versa'*. This suggests that place is a temporal entity, which changes over time and meanings also change based on human experience. Urry (1995, p. 266) explains that '*human beings are fundamentally temporal and find their meanings in the temporal character of human existence'*. Hence, sense of place is a temporal phenomenon, which develops 'as actual events and generations come and go' (Seamon, 1980, p. 263).

At this point, it can be argued that spirit of place can be manifested through a very deep understanding of the factors that have influenced the shaping of the place rather than relying on the features of a design and their historic connotations as relations to the past. In the other words, identity cannot be acquired by only referring to history but also through a very deep understanding of what makes particular features valuable, and analysing those features can assist in eliciting new ideas and concepts. Nevertheless, it is generally agreed from Norberg-Schulz's (1971) view that a genius locus is closely related to the place identity in terms of the uniqueness and meanings, which still need more explanation as to how they are exactly interrelated in the creation of place.

In this respect, the above arguments developed an interesting point into understanding the differences between a space and a place, and critically questioned to what extent physical features can be designed without taking the people into account. While the term of 'dwelling' has been used in phenomenological literature to argue the importance of 'being-in-the-world'

(e.g., Seamon, 1980; Dovey, 2014), Sime (1986) emphasises the potential of the physical environment of a place for its users and inhabitants in the process of design. Thus, the spirit of place has been interpreted as a quality (e.g., social, culture, meanings, etc.) that embodies the physical environment.

2.3.2 Sense of Place

Creating a sense of place is one of essential concerns of the urban design field (Shamai, 1991; Carmona at. al, 2010). However, *'understanding what creates a true sense of place … is a complex task'* (Shamai, 1991, p. 347). The key point of discussing the sense of place here is that it often lies in the perception dimension i.e. in the basis of knowing the environment as part of human knowledge and experience of the urban image (Proshansky et al., 1983). In urban design literature, place identity and sense of place are often conceived as closely related concepts as both address individuals' cognitions and perceptions of the built environment where they inhabit and work (Proshansky et al., 1983). Therefore, in the understanding sense of place, it is essential in this research to better understand place identity.

The sense of place is often referred to as the actual experience of individuals in a specific setting and how they feel about it based on their perceptions (Williams, et al., 1992; Relph, 1976). According to Garnham (1985), sense of place is based on the degree of recognition someone has of the mechanisms that generate identification with their surroundings and the need to be in a recognisable place. According to Tuan (1990), the experience relies on the sense of place based on the *'consciousness and reflectively'* on the safe and comfortable position of being in a locality. The self-conscious state produces meaning through establishing boundaries with the physical environment. Therefore, sense of place is a part of awareness, knowing and appraisal of the surrounding environment as a result of human interaction with space.

A part of the human experience of place, Pred (1983) cited in Shamai (1991) argues, is the experience produced by the senses, or through the perceptual

process of a place. Others refer to this as legibility, and indeed Banz (1970) states that obtaining a sense of place means that individuals can orient themselves in their environment by using all their senses. Thus, sense of place can be conceived as the ability of persons to be rewarded and evoked by their surroundings. This ability can be associated with the degree of familiarity and imageability that an individual has developed with a place (Lynch, 1960).

For Shamia (1991, p. 354), 'feelings, attitudes, and behaviour' are three important components related to the way a person can make sense of a place. Yet, this means that sense of place is an experience that an individual or group of people have with a spatial setting. In respect to this, some authors stress the importance of understanding a sense of place as a possibility of embodying 'cognitive', 'affective' and 'conative' responses to a spatial setting (Stedman, 2002b; Jorgensen and Stedman, 2006; Jive'n and Larkham, 2010). Hence, a sense of place is a combination of identity (the relationship between self and place), place attachment (emotional bound to place), and dependence. This suggests that a sense of place, therefore, derives from the attribution of meanings to physical features (Relph, 1976). Hence, sense of place is a multifaceted concept, *which subsumes other concepts describing relationships between human beings and spatial settings. Accordingly, Sense of Place is not imbued in the physical setting itself but resides in human interpretations of the setting'* (Jorgensen and Stedman, 2001, p. 233).

A sense of place can be described as an intimate relationship between people and place that develops over time (Jones and Semple, 2012). According to Twigger-Ross et al. (2003) and Jive'n and Larkham (2010), an individual and a group often need to create a sense of place that expresses their sense of belonging to certain places, which can be acquired through the qualities presented by the physical environment (Carmona et al., 2010). Thus, a sense of place describes the emotional local connection that develops dynamically over time as a result of people-place relationships (Twigger-Ross et al., 2003; Jive'n and Larkham, 2010).

One of the characteristics of sense of place is that it differs from person to person and from one community to another and is different between natives, visitors, short and long-term residents. Semken and Freeman (2008, p. 1043) suitably noted that a sense of place is *'used liberally but often differently in humanistic, sociological, geographic, and educational discourse to encapsulate connections among people and places'*. This makes it a difficult concept to define. Sense of place, in this study, is more akin to distinctive features i.e. described as *'…those things that add up to a feeling that a community is a special place, distinct from anywhere else'* (Butina-Watson and Bentley, 2007). In this respect, it can be assumed that places have a distinct image that can evoke people's perceptions, meanings and attachment to it, and ultimately tend to have a distinctive identity.

2.3.3 Place and Placelessness

In contemporary life, arguments surrounding the development of technological advances, modernisation, globalisation, free marketing and mobility, often suggest that the phenomenon of place has become increasingly insignificant. Rapid economic growth and constant change are producing homogeneous places and more and more contemporary cities are *'hardly discernible places with distinct identities'* (Amin, 2006, p. 1009) as they reflect homogeneity and seem to lack meaning and uniqueness (Arefi, 1999).

The concept of 'placelessness' or 'non-places', as suggested by Relph (1976) and Arefi (1999) respectively, is a result of the lack of meaning that is represented by the physical landscapes held within a cultural and emotional context. This is as a result of the increasing homogeneity in our contemporary cities, which in turn influences one's sense of place and degree of attachment to a place (Relph, 1976; Garnham, 1985; Low & Altman, 1992; Giulaiani & Feldman, 1993). According to Relph (1976, p. 6), the concept of placelessness is *'the weakening of distinct and diverse experiences and identities of places and marks a major shift in the geographical basics of existence form a deep association with*

places to rootlessness'. Thus, it seems clear that, creating meaningful places is a key subjective matter in urban design, which requires them to be unique and distinguished from other settings (Tibbalds, 1992). However, questions such as how we can create our contemporary cities that still have their own identity, and, alternatively, how cities can be transformed into better places, are crucial questions increasingly entering the recent debates (Bentley, 2004; Madanipour, 2006).

In this phenomena of urban changes of most contemporary cities, including in the Libyan context, the relationship between a person and places become less stable and increasingly the personal experience becomes influenced by globalisation and thus disconnected from the local context (Meyrowitz, 1986; Giddens, 1991; Hay, 1998). These concerns have brought about an important question regarding the creation of meaningful places as a reflection of the everyday lives of people. *'They also raise questions about how such everyday experiences of place are related to the conceptualization of place within social and behavioural science'* (Gustafson, 2001, p. 5)

The loss of place meanings is associated with the lack of ability to continue to have feelings for a certain place (Rapoport (1977), due to a loss of substance (Hull et al., 1994). Placelessness is the inability of physical elements to provide messages and meanings that people perceive and decode based on their roles, experiences, expectations, and motivations (Rapoport (1977) and the loss of feelings or detachment to a certain place. For example, Speller et al. (2002) in a study on place and identity in the context of relocation from an historical village to a new neighbourhood, found that people are able to generate meanings and associations with their new location. When this happens, meaning will decline as a result of the lack of qualities of the place that are associated with an individual's culture and identity. Therefore, it is important to create and maintain strong meaningful places that can still evoke the experience and feelings of a person in a particular setting. This is because of the significance of meaningful places in creating a stronger self-identity, sense of community and sense of place (Hull et

al., 1994). At this point, it can be argued that identifying the attributes and characteristics that evoke people's perceptions and influencing factors of meanings associated with the urban place are important to define place identity.

2.4 Scale of Places

Place can be scaled from home to a country. Previous research highlights that the size of place varies from the micro scale (home, room, plaza, street) to medium (cities, communities, neighbourhood) and large scale setting (region, nations) (Altman and Low, 1992). The scale of space is defined by the geographical (physical) boundaries and the types refer to the function of the places (residential, commercial, recreational etc.). Most studies carried out on place identity and related studies such as place attachment and meanings have focused their range of analysis on the neighbourhood (Hidalgo and Hernández, 2001; Lewicka, 2008a). In expanding the knowledge of place, this study further analyses a type of place (city centre) with a defined scale within a mixed used commercial district to examine place identity.

2.5 The Concept of Place in Relation to the City Centre

From a review of the literature, it can be found that the city centre is often considered the most valued district, which often has some distinctive characteristics that make it the most important place and the very essence of most cities (Worskett, 1969). Likewise, (Madanipour, 2006, p. 176) argued that the city centre is the heart of any city in which the historical buildings, commerce, entertainment, shopping and political power are concentrated *and where most people live and work'*. The city centre tends to be the most visited place, and is considered to be a vital area of attraction (ibid). Thus, the city centre can provide a unique case study opportunity for researching place identity.

As already stated in this chapter, places can be defined both objectively and subjectively. The objective definition is in terms of its architectural style, materials, size, land use, population density and other associations. In contrast,

for the residents of the city, the definition is very subjective and is accompanied by meanings and attachment. Both definitions are important for making the city centre a better and unique place for its residents.

The way in which people cognitively define places, and the criteria used in doing so, are important in urban design. This is important for planning and design generally, as well as in the construction and reconstruction of our contemporary cities as regards reflecting the socio-cultural dimension. City centres as the core of the city are continuously growing and inevitably undergo constant evaluation as well as holding a special attachment and meaning for their residents.

According to Gibberd (1970), since most important public buildings and major commercial buildings are in the city centre, it usually becomes a place for entertainment and public assembly. It is also the place where most care is given to civic spaces, buildings and urban embellishments. Considering the character of a city centre, Gibberd (1970) contends that it should be the place that gives the greatest feeling of urbanity and an impression of the town's environment.

The city centre is also a hub of meaning and a visible expression of man's value systems, beliefs, ideas, hopes and fears (Downs and Stea, 1973; Tuan, 1977). According to Smith (2013), traditionally, the city represents a cultural continuum, which fixes its people in a time and place, and binds them with the past and the future. Familiar city centre buildings, he adds, are essential contributors to the ultimate sense of place that the city projects. He further emphasises that '*towns and cities should confer identity on their inhabitants* [...] *they do this by their uniqueness and the stronger that individuality, the more it attests to a powerful community character'* (Smith, 2013, p. 50). This also implies that it is important for the identity of place to be perceived by its inhabitants, as this will develop into a strong sense of community.

It is apparent that the study of place identity is best done in the city centre because of its importance and special characteristics. In Libya, the city centre can be physically divided into two parts, the old quarter and the newer

expansion. The old area is associated with the beginnings of the city and accommodates many of the old and historical buildings in the city centre. The architecture of the buildings is also different from buildings that have been built recently during the development process.

2.6 Place Identity

Place identity has always a popular research subject matter of various disciplines, such as geography, urban planning, urban design, landscape architecture, environmental psychology, and sociology. The concerning about our environment against urbanization and globalizations processes, which have caused lacking of place identity, have brought this concept to the top agenda of urban designers in the last few decades. However, the notion of place identity as it appeared from the literature still to be one of the most elusive concepts to have certain definition. Perhaps this is because it refers to the relationship of self to the environment (Zeisel, 1984). Perhaps it is because *identity manifests itself on many levels, one of which is place'* (Hauge, 2007, p. 44). Perhaps the term place identity embodies a vast array of and multitudinous concepts such as self, others, environment and so forth (Gustafson, 2001). There is also the possibility that, even within the same discipline, place identity can have multiple definitions (Breakwell, 1986). Although the literature suggests a numerous ways and theorists regarding the notion place identity, this study does not attempt to find out a distinct definition of place identity rather than it seeks to review the current debates surrounding this subject.

2.6.1 Why is Place Identity Important?

Many questions come to mind when researching the subject of place identity. Places are not a static entity (Mausner, 1996) and thus, they always change and develop and they will continue to do so. If this is the scenario, perhaps it is not necessary to be concerned about the transformation in the contemporary cities and its identity. There are two main reasons that can be considered for making

an attempt to understand identity in relation to place. First, it has significance in its own right, as an essential manifestation of one's identity i.e. as a part of an individual or group's self-identity (Roster et al., 2016). The second is that increasing our knowledge of place identity can contribute to the enhancement and manipulation of existing cities and improve new places (Montgomery, 1998).

Related to worldwide movement and transformation, major concerns have arisen about the loss of distinctiveness between different places. To be identified means to be distinct from others, as Wagner (1972, p. 75) expresses, *'to be oneself one has to be somewhere definite, do certain things at appropriate times'* or to be less homogeneous with others. To date, a variety of ideas have emerged such as whether people identify themselves with a place, or people make sense of their places to construct their identities and the identity of place. Alternatively, places are no longer the clear support of our identity. Hence, the subject of place identity is wide and includes other related concepts such as place, sense of place, place attachment, meanings, perception and cognition, and identity.

2.6.2 Place Identity as an Urban Image

In understanding place identity, several authors emphasise the importance of physical attributes and characteristics in the construction of the essence of place and place identity (Williams et al., 1992; Gieryn, 2000; Stedman, 2003). In urban planning and design, taking account of physical components has been referred to as a '*visual image of the environment that reflects special or unique qualities'* (Green, 1999, p. 180). For Lynch (1984), identity is the degree of imageability, in which a city can be perceived as coherent mental representations. He refers to identity in the way the observer recognises the object in space as a distinctive element and endows it with meaning.

In this regard, place identity, according to Lynch (1960, p. 131), is *'…the extent to which a person can recognise or recall a place as being distinct from other places as having a vivid, or unique, or at least a particular character of its own'*. Lynch's definition is essentially formed of perception or as he calls it

'legibility', in which a city can be perceived mentally as a coherent image and distinct from other places. This seems more akin to this study's framework, specifically in terms of looking at the identity through the lens of perception. Thus, it is more important to understand place character through qualities that have become most salient, and account for just how and why those qualities matter. The approach suggests that people are attached to certain attributes or characteristics of places, not places as a whole entity. This research examines the attributes in light of place attachment dimensions.

However, this definition i.e. as an image treated place identity as a physical context, whilst other socio-psychological factors have been given less attention. In this way, Relph (1976) makes a further point when he suggests that place identity is related to the way of people identifying or interpreting their surrounding environment it rather than the dealing with the immediate visual appearance of a place. Likewise, Proshansky, et al. (1983, p. 76) argue that place identity is about '*a total complicated image that is mentally represented by the observer as a comprehensive combination of memories, ideas, feelings, attitudes, values, preferences, meanings, and conceptions of behaviour and experience, which relate to the variety and complexity of physical settings that define the day-to day existence of every human being*'. Therefore, the concept of imageability is a broad and holistic term and may involve many operations and stages. Nevertheless, addressing place identity as an image that reflects the place characteristics provides a useful idea to consider the distinctive features that are recognised and remembered by people as a perceptual factor.

Indeed, there is a large agreement on the imageable environment as an important source not only to provide a clear value to the observer during the perception process, but also as a basis for reinforcing identity and attachment to a place (Lynch, 1960; Hillier and Hanson, 1984; Bentley, 1985). In this regard, it can be argued that the importance of image on identity is recognised as a distractive feature of the environment. Hence, image is a part of the perception

process for knowing the world, and thus it is a useful tool to analysis the place identity.

2.6.3 Place Identity as a Self-Expression

In the environmental psychology literature, the term of place identity was first coined by Proshansky (1978) when he linked the notion of self-identity with a place. Referring to this early work of the 1970s, the definition of place identity was '*those dimensions of the self that define the individual's personal identity in relation to the physical environment by means of a complex pattern of conscious and unconscious ideas, beliefs, preferences, feelings, values, goals, and behavioural tendencies and skills relevant to this environment*' (Proshansky, 1978, p. 155).

Later on, he and his colleagues added to this definition other concepts such as the '*potpourri of memories, conceptions, interpretations, ideas and related feelings about specific physical settings as well as types of settings*' (Proshansky at el., 1983, p. 60). Indeed, these authors conceptualised the place identity '*as a substructure of the person's self-identity*' (Proshansky & Fabian, 1987, p. 22). Furthermore, their definitions were significant in terms of the role of the physical built environment in shaping self-identity (individual and society). According to them, people develop self-identity not only in reference to their social interaction but also in relation to the physical environment as an essential part of self-identity.

Despite the important contribution offered by Proshansky et al. (1983) in terms of definitions, there have been countless others from various other disciplines, which deserve attention, including those from environmental psychology, urban design and social sciences (e.g., Dixon, 2000; Korpela, 1989; Manzo, 2003; Speller et al., 2002; Twigger-Ross and Uzzell, 1996; Twigger-Ross et al., 2003). Criticisms have been lodged against these definitions mostly concerned with the weakness of the empirical and theoretical basis for the place identity conceptualisation.

Speller et al. (2002) noted that the concept of place identity as a substructure of identity is not fully applied and therefore a more comprehensive approach needs to be developed. She also concluded that people often respond to their places temporarily based on their subjective interpretation and supporting a person's identity. According to Speller et al. (2002), place identity is more akin to the social identity theory as a result of a dynamic complex interaction between the social and spatial environment.

In his commentary paper on Proshansky and colleagues' work on place identity, Krupat (1985, p. 344) states that they *'have asked more questions rather than answered and proposed further possibilities than the concept may yet be able to deliver. It is only a start, but I believe it is still an auspicious one'*. In brief, these authors acknowledged that even though there has been much done that has relevance to theory development, place-identity has not yet been adequately theorised in relation to a general model of self and empirical work and has not been fed back into the theoretical development (see Table 2.1). Unlike social psychology identity theories that have been tested and elaborated on extensively, theorising about place and identity in terms of physical environment has largely been neglected (see e.g., Hauge, 2007; Stedman, 2003). Thus, this research includes the physical environment as one of the essential elements in defining place identity.

Table 2.1: Development of key concept of place identity as shown in the literature.

Author(s)/ date	Contributions
Lynch (1960, p. 131)	Identity is '*…the extent to which a person can **recognise or recall a place as being distinct** from other places as having a vivid, or unique, or at least a particular character of its own'*.
Relph (1976)	Identity is formed through **the image** of a place.
Proshansky (1978)	The dimension of the self that defines the **personal identity** in relation to the physical environment.
Proshansky et al. (1983)	Meanings about specific physical settings.
Scoffham (1987, cited from Shamsuddin, 1997)	Identity is a **unique characteristic** that makes it distinct from others.
Giuliani (1991)	Place identity has an **emotional core**, a bond to the place, such as a home and objects in the home.
Lalli (1992)	Place identity is developed on the basis of **social psychological factors** on self-concept.
Green (1992)	A **visual image** of the environment that reflects special or unique qualities.
(Cuba and Hummon, 1993a)	Place identity is the interpretation of the self that uses environmental **meanings to symbolic** identity.
Hull et al., (1994)	Place identity is unique features of the place that reflects the resident's place identity formed over years of interacting with the environment. According to them, unique features are the **icons** found to be salient.
Haartsen et al. (2000)	Place identity is not subjective to the physical environment of the place but is also the way that people feel and connect with **the perceived qualities** of that place.
Speller et al. (2002)	Place identity is a result of a **combination of place attachment and place identification** intertwined and changing over time.
Knox and Marston (2004, p. 508)	'*Place identity can be defined as that people make of themselves through their **subjective feelings based on their everyday experience** and wider social relations'*.
Butina-Watson and Bentley (2007, p. 6)	'*…is the set of **meanings** associated with any particular landscape which any person draws on the construction of their **personal or social identities'***.
Morgan (2010)	Place identity applies only to the **social environment**, not the physical environment.
Cheshmehzangi (2012b)	'*…as a quality that is often developed through the physicality of a place…it results in the complexity of relations between sociality of place, **behavioural pattern of place and perceptual matters** that often relate to the image and sense of place'*.
(Kaymaz, 2013, p. 740)	'*Place identity is more than just the physical appearance, but also involves subjective factors i.e. meanings for the individual and the community* […] *place identity is also flexible and evolving'*.

Source: The author, (2015).

2.6.4 Identifications

In a broad sense, one's identity involves identification with the territories or places; this aspect of identity is traditionally called, within environmental psychology, 'place identity' (e.g. a Londoner) (Lewicka, 2008). Furthermore, the identification concept assumes that evaluation of shaping identity by identifying oneself with his or her spatial setting. Zeisel (1984) argues that place identity refers to the relationship of self to the built environment and that partly an individual's entire identity involves identification of places. A traditional answer for the question of who one is to say 'I am a New Yorker' or 'I am a Roman', indicating identification with place (Cuthbert, 2003; Sepe, 2013). Indeed, when people refer to physical places where they live or come from such as a city or a country with regards to themselves, they, explicitly or implicitly, create the social identity.

In addition, people often have a sort of ligament close, tangibly, towards their locality or places that present their social values, sense of belongings and identity. Sepe (2013), for example, states that the identity of a person consists of a set of elements and patterns, which determines the world, they feel they belong to. In this sense, a person's identity has referred to the shared identity that is determined by the identifiable physical environment.

2.6.5 Place Identity and Time

One of the important characteristics of the place identity is that always seen as temporal phenomenon, which is flexible and always evolving (Rollero and De Piccoli, 2010). According to Kaymaz, (2013, p. 745) '*there is a two-way relationship between a person and a place. While place influences self-identity, people also tend to create, change or maintain their physical surroundings in the way which reflect themselves'*. Hence, the physical environment is a reflection of the identity of its users and perceiving place identity is dynamic and changes over the lifecycle of a person.

In the 1990s, the integration between place and identity has been addressed by many researchers (e.g., Korpela, 1989; Twigger, 1992; Twigger-Ross & Uzzell, 1996; Breakwell, 1993; Sepe 2013; Dixon, 2000; Speller, 2002). Those authors emphasise place identity as one integrated process entity and argue that identity is a dynamic phenomenon with continuous ongoing change and transformation from one stage to another during the cycle of life (i.e. from childhood to adolescence). Therefore, it should not be seen as a static property of individuals but as a product of knowledge and experience in a given and changing social context (Dixon, 2000).

Drawing on the theory of Proshansky et al. (1983), Korpela (1989) refers to the use of the physical environment for a narrower definition of place identity as a psychological approach, about managing the influence of environment on the individual. Through the interaction with the environment, he argues that people can create a distinct image to define themselves to others. Thus, according to him, at this level of psychological process, *place belongingness is not only one aspect of place identity, but a necessary basis for it'* (Korpela, 1989, p. 246). This indicates the importance of belonging to the self-definition as the core of place identity also has been supported by other writers (Tuan, 1980 cited from Dixon, 2000; Cuba and Hummon, 1993b).

In this sense, place identity has been described as a component of personal identity, a process by which through interaction with places, people describe themselves in terms of belonging to a specific place (Hernandez et al., 2007). By this practice, people consider the physical environment as key urban elements by which they can identify themselves. The notion of places and the city, in general, is a combination of personal experiences, social habits, behaviours and images.

2.6.6 Place Identity and Meanings

Others believe that place identity is the production of the symbols that manifest through individuals' experiences of their environment. Places may

involve symbolic meanings, which are important because they also allow places and 'things' to become objects of identification. This experience involves perceptions of the qualities that imbue places with a distinctive character, as well as an individual's tie or association with place (Peterson, 1988). This position assumes that symbolism arises from the person's experience of the environment and is also related to one's own cognition and knowledge in interpreting the meanings to the self and then shaping personal identity. Peterson, (1988, p. 452) suggests that '*places and place identity are interventions of an awareness of their deep symbolic significance and an appreciation for their individual character'.*

Furthermore, for many researchers, (e.g. Proshansky et al., 1995; Relph, 1996; Shamai, 1991; Williams and Roggenbuck, 1989), place identity refers to the symbolic importance or meaning of a place as a repository for emotions that give a meaning to the purpose of life. It reflects the sense of belonging and is important to a person's well-being individually and collectively. However, for a long time, meaning has been considered one of three main components of identity, alongside the physical features and activity, and just recently has been referred to as a part of self-identity. For instance, Shamai (1991, p 350) argues '*identity combines with the meaning of the place and its symbols to create a 'personality' of the place'*. In general, this approach suggests that place identity contains a set of meanings defining who one is. Likewise, Proshansky et al. (1983, p. 42) describe place identity as '*the symbolic importance of place as a repository for emotions and relationships that give meaning and purpose to life, reflect a sense of belonging and important to a person's well-being'*. Indeed, this symbolic significance arises from the desire to express a sense of belonging to a place or certain features that dominate a space. In this respect, while psychologists mainly define place identity by linking it to the place attachment, in an urban design context, place identity is mostly conceptualised as a physical image and perception with a little emphasis on the depth of meanings. Thus, this study integrates the three concepts of perception, meanings and place

attachment as a framework to examine the place identity. The meaning factor will be further discussed in chapter three.

2.6.7 Place Identity and Place Attachment

Attachment to a place has been used as a connection element between place identity and identification. For many researchers, identifications and place identity have been used as a predictor for place attachment scales (e.g., Twigger-Ross, Uzzell, 1996; Lalli, 1992; Lewicka, 2008 and Hernandez et al., 2007). In their study of place identity using the place identity process of Breakwell's (1983) model as a framework, Twigger-Ross & Uzzell (1996) explore the extent to which an attachment with a place can serve to reinforce the aspects of identity. Their findings showed that identification is an important element of attachment, which enables people to express their identity. They noted that those people who are not attached to a certain place showed less self-identification with that place, while those highly attached to a place have a strong place identification (see also Bonaiuto et al., 1996). Likewise, Lalli (1992) observes that place identity and attachment are related concepts and are manifested through the identification with place. This suggests that place and identity are linked through attachment to place in terms of identification. Indeed, the term '*identification is often used interchangeably with place identity and place attachment'* (Speller, 2002, p. 3), and yet those terms remain not clearly distinguished (Cuba and Hummon, 1993a). Hence, there is a need to distinguish between the two terms in use for understanding their relationship with place.

Indeed, the relationship between place identity and place attachment remains confused and uncertain. For example, some authors conceptualise place identity in terms of the emotional dimension, which occurred at the same level of meanings (Lalli, 1992; Proshansky et al, 1983; Korpela, 1989). Others argue that place attachment and place identity are two different concepts (Lewicka, 2008; Hernandez et al., 2007). However, there is a general agreement that they are closely related concepts, as they are both based on people-place

relationships and experience (e.g., Chow & Healey, 2008; Kyle et al., 2004). This study assumes that places that people feel attached to strongly will have a clear identity and therefore, it wished to explore how place attachment could contribute to maintaining place identity. In other words, the place attachment is considered an important dimension for predicting place identity, as will be discussed in chapter three later.

2.7 Chapter Conclusion

This chapter has reviewed the vast volume of theoretical and empirical work on place and place identity and other related concepts for a better understanding of the nature of the relationship between person and place towards making successful places. It is evident from the literature that urban design research associates place with urban forms, meanings and activities while environmental psychology research locates it within the wider concept of place attachment. The relationship between individuals and their environment is a fundamental matter in urban design and social sciences for creating successful places.

It is evident that the relationship between place and identity has been described in two main ways. One is the place identity theory of Proshansky et al. (1983), in which the human constructs an environment that reveals the nature of the self, and the environment, in turn, gives information back to the people. This is through considering the physical environment as distinctive elements, which are perceived by individuals and determine one's identity. The other way is through involving the psychological factor with the environment or place, including identification with place as subsequent to place attachment. Meaning is the other term used in the literature to emphasise the physical environment's impact on identity, referring to the level of place attachment. However, while place identity in environmental psychology and social identity theory has empirically developed, the place identity constructed by the physical environment that introduced by Proshansky et al., (1987, 1983, and 1987) is yet weak. Therefore, for this study, place identity is conceptualised as a complex set

of attachment to physical experience and perceived meanings associated to places' characteristics, which people use in the construction of their personal identity. Based on the review there are five key points that need to be briefly summarised:

Place generally refers to two different understandings: firstly, a characteristic that places have and which makes them unique (geographical), and secondly, as a feeling or perception that is held by people towards these characteristics, which foster their attachment and belonging (psychological). In this study, both views are considered in order to assess place identity as the physical world as well as self-identity.

Identity and image are strongly related to the creatation of place identity. It is evident that the image of the urban environment is evoked through involvement and not just by looking at the city. It is a mental construct made up of sets of visual associations, which are then supplemented by known facts about the environment. The individual selects the data available to them and in the process, they define their own environment.

It was apparent from the literature review that place identity is concerned with the distinctiveness of a place as perceived by the people. This means that identity is qualities that make a place recognised as being distinct from other places. Thus, this suggests that identity is a quality that enables the physical environment to be noticed and remembered by the people. The reason why the environment is noticed could be due to the physical qualities or meanings evoked by the physical structures.

A generally accepted definition of place and place identity is lacking and there is an inconsistency with the use of the terminology. In this study, wherever the terms place and place identity are used, it is intended that they should be defined as follows:

Place identity, in this research, is defined as a *'substructure of the self-identity of the person consisting of broadly conceived cognition about the*

physical world in which the individual lives' (Proshansky et al., 1983, p. 59; see also Proshansky, 1978). Place identity, for this study, is a production of human experience with their places, which is constructed over time and appears to build particular meanings and ultimately attachment to a particular place in a particular time. For this research, place identity is the set of meanings associated with a particular context or culture or place, which a particular individual or group of people can draw on in the construction of their own personal or social identities (Sep, 2013, p. 15). This means that when a person says that a place represents me or it is about my culture or history, or that it expresses their values and notion of identity, it gives that place a clear identity and meaning. Thus, place identity is a multidimensional phenomenon.

This study is concerned with place identity as relatively enduring people-environment experiences, and cognition, although importantly, these are seen as a dynamic process and therefore always in constant flux. Hence, in this research, place is generally ascribed to geographical space or physical setting, which has acquired meanings through everyday lived experience. It was considered that the best integrative model to guide this research is by combining the phenomenological and psychological approach to fill the gap in the literature regarding place identity.

Subjective

Space

Place attachment

Human

Meanings

Sense of place

Human experience

Human-place
relationship

Place quality

Spirit of place

Place

Physical settings

Place

Physical features & meanings

Objective
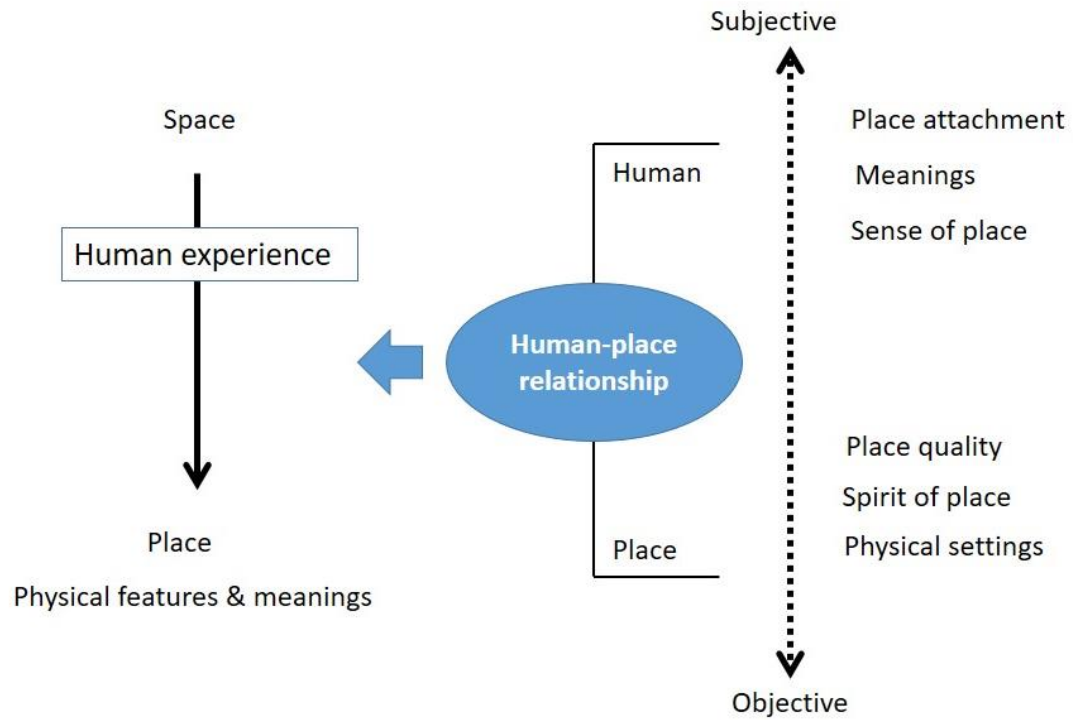
Figure 2.3: place and place identity based on the person-place relationship (The author, 2015).

Given the deep discussion on place identity, the sub-concepts (i.e. perception, meanings and place attachment) have emerged as it appears in the current literature. It is now appropriate to consider deeply the theoretical framework within which the work has been carried out in this study.

3   CHAPTER THREE: THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK FOR PLACE IDENTITY

3.1   Introduction

This chapter, together with chapter two, outlines an analytical framework, which underpins this research. As a part of the literature review, this chapter reviews the theories underlying the choice of a multidimensional model for the concepts perception of physical attributes, meanings and place attachment. It also highlights the significance of these concepts and their influencing factors and attributes in sustaining place identity. The purpose of this chapter is to establish the conceptual framework to guide the research analysis.

This chapter is divided into three parts. The first part reviews concepts and theories on environmental perceptions and the attributes and characteristics residing in the physical elements. The second part presents theories on meanings. It is followed by describing the psychological dimension of place attachment and influencing factors. The final section presents the conclusion to this chapter.

3.2   Knowing the Environment

Getting to know or learning from the environment is not only 'innate', it is also necessary in order *'to invent the structures which enable us to assimilate reality'* (Moore, 1976, p. 139). In other words, *'to be human is to live in a world that is filled with significant places: to be human is to have and know your place'* (Relph, 1976 cited in (Low, 1992, p. 166). Likewise, Loge (1994) from Carmona and Tiesdell (2007) argues that knowledge is a basic need for life and an awareness of the world is important in order to survive in it, as to behave

successfully and to understand one has to learn, which includes, in the widest sense, sensation and perception (Canter, 1977).

For many psychologists, such as Piaget (1956) and Moore (1976), knowledge is a matter of the relation between 'subject' and 'object'. The subject is about a human's feelings, understanding, and response to the environment, which is apparent as the object. The concept of the urban environment is broad, referring to the world around us and encompassing everything, one can see or feel about it or even which can not be perceived. It is spatially associated with us as being a series of physical structures and actions, and temporally as being a continuity of social, cultural and religious values across a range of variables that arise and take shape as we develop. This implies that the built environment consists of two foundations: the first is the physical elements and the second is the space and its organisation regarding the nature of the urban environment.

Awareness of environmental experience and perception of place is an essential dimension of urban design (Carmona et al, 2010). It has been argued several times that environmental perception has been reinforced by a body of work focusing on the experiential sense of place and live-in experiences associated with urban environment (e.g. Appleyard, 1973, 1979; Green 1999, 2010; Kaplan and Kaplan, 1989; Lynch, 1960; Nasar, 1998).

Throughout the interactive role with place, people get to know about surrounding environment through 'sensory input', and then they evaluate these inputs based on a set of other factors such as personal experience and cultural knowledge, resulting in spatial behaviour (Sepe, 2013). Thus, the information that people gain during the perception process does not only build their experience but also allows them to act and respond to the environment and to influence their behaviour. Perception, therefore, is an important factor in evaluation and creation of places in relation to this dynamic continuing process of perception between a person and their environment (Rodaway, 1994 cited in Sepe, 2013, p. 44).

In psychology, Canter (1977) explains that the relationship between people and their environment is the experience and action that take place through people reacting and dealing with the complexity and diversity of their surrounding environment. This means that the first stage for a person getting to know about their environment is simply being within it. According to Moore (1976), perception refers to how the object becomes known by the subject. Consequently, people develop their information about the environment through their experience, images, impressions and beliefs, and then they react and respond to it (ibid). Once again, this implies that perception is a part of the cognition process towards knowing the environment.

3.2.1 Process of Knowing the Environment

The process of knowing the environment is complex, but in most cases, it involves the stimulation of the subject's senses by the surrounding objects. Experiences with a place can play an important role in their way of dealing, interpreting and reacting towards other places. In all cases, sensory experiences are assimilated into stable structures of knowing and understanding because information derived from the environment is stored in the minds and decoded when it is needed (Altman and Chemers, 1984).
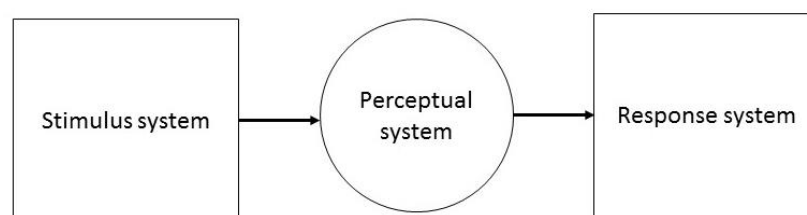
Figure 3.1: the three systems operate in a causal relationship, although there may be interdependencies (Garner et al., 1956, p. 150).

Literature suggests that there are two important combined processes, in which individuals form their knowledge about the environment: perception and cognition. The production of perception and cognition means that substantive information is gained through a sensory system to be structured effectively within the observer's mental perception down to the mental image (see Figure 3.2). Thus, the mental

image represents the total ideas, knowledge and beliefs that the individual forms through past, present and future from the surrounding environment and the consequent actions, whether negative or positive. Still, individuals retain only the most significant characteristics of this knowledge and thoughts through their interpretation and evaluation of their surrounding environment.

Becoming aware
What kind of place change will occur?

Interpreting
What are the implications of change for this place?

Evaluating
Will the outcomes of place change be positive or negative?

Coping
How might I respond to place change?

Acting
What can I do about it?
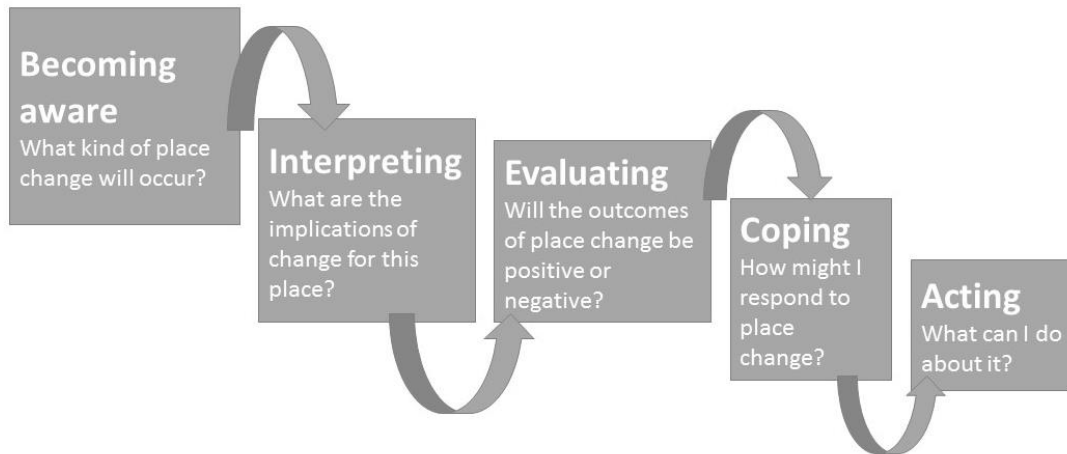
Figure 3.2: Stages of psychological response over time to place change. Source: (Devine-Wright, 2009, p. 433).

According to Relph (1976), individuals interpret their surrounding environment based on their thoughts and knowledge. This implies that perception and cognition of the environment differ from one individual to another as well as across cultures and, in turn, they contribute to an initial knowledge of the world.

The process of understanding the environment according to (Carmona et al., 2010) is driven through four main stages respectively. The first stage is cognitive, which involves receiving and organising information from the surrounding environment. The second stage is the effective, focusing on the feelings that observers experienced from the stimulus. The third is the interpretive, which will draw meanings and lastly, the evaluative, which is about

assessing or appraising the values of this interpreted information in terms of likes (or dislikes) and preferences.

3.2.2 Perception and Cognition

Perception and cognition often overlap and are confusing terminologies and consequently are at times used interchangeably by many scholars (Carmona et al 2010). In general, perception is *'becoming aware through the senses'* by a direct sensory experience of a stimulus, while cognition *'is getting knowledge by the mind'* (Canter, 1977, p. 8).

Perception differs from cognition in other aspects although they are admittedly related and integrated. For example, according to Garner et al. (1956,p. 158), *'perception is a process intervening between stimuli and responses'*. Therefore, perception, unlike cognition, is a direct sensory experience of the environment that individuals have during their involvement within the environment. In the same way, Canter (1977, pp. 6-7) describes perception as *'the process of becoming aware of the stimuli in our surroundings'*, while, according to him, cognition refers to *'fully understanding what place implies and how it may be used'*. For Rapoport and Hawkes (1970), both perception and cognition have been described as an integrated process to gain the knowledge of the surrounding environment. Hence, they argue that urban perception is about receiving information and at the same time also about learning. It is thus a likely hypothesis that perception is part of the cognition process in the formulation of knowledge.

To make a distinction between perception and cognition, one difference is that perception relies upon the immediate information provided by the environment or 'stimulus', while cognition reflects a deeper understanding of the information, mediated by past experience, cultural background, beliefs, and memory. This ultimately affects the act of decision-making and response to the environment. Moore (1976) observed that immediate reaction (immediately follows the initial impression in the human's senses) and stimulus dependency

(visual stimulus of physical elements) are standard criteria for perception. Hence, it is hard to discuss perception as separate from cognition because within the perception process between response and stimulus a certain amount of time or interval is required, which may be affected by experience or past memory. Moore (1976) himself even admitted that there is no pure perception without cognition. Therefore, it seems clear that perception is based on previous thought, and experience and knowledge or perceptions are part of the cognition process.

Thus, perception, in its simplest illustration, refers to the mental process formulation of the information about our surrounding environment through our five sensory systems. Yet, perception associated with cognition is more important than the direct reactions to simple stimuli. This suggests that perception is a personal assessment of the environment, revealing individuals' understanding and interest of the constituent elements of the environment. However, cognition involves a deeper understanding of the phenomenon or it means getting to know about something, as suggested by Rapoport (1977). In this sense, Appleyard (1973) argues that perception depends '*… upon the construction of a set of organised categories in terms of which stimulus inputs may be sorted, given identity and given more elaborated, connotative meaning'* (Appleyard, 1973, p. 111). Hence, phenomenologist scholars believe that the world can be understood through personal knowledge based on the interrelationships between humans and the environment. Accordingly, one can argue that cognition is the process of multiple dynamic information rather than a single direction. The first phase of perception is characterised by a psychological process, while the second, cognition, is the intellectual process of evaluation and assessment. From the above, we can argue that perception and cognition, although they are separated phenomena, are ultimately integrated and combined in order to gain a complete image and understanding of the world.

3.3 Physical Environment

Fundamentally, the physical world is a tangible composition that shapes our surrounding environment, including entirely sensual scenes. According to Zeisel (1984, p. 181), physical environment involves ' *objects in a setting; places, such as street corners, tot lots, rooms, and stairwell as; relation between places created by such things as walls, distance, windows, barriers, adjacencies; and qualities of the setting; such as light and sound'*.

Accordingly, the physical environment is commonly divided into two types: tangible and intangible elements. The tangible features, as Greene (1992) suggests, contain masses (land forms and buildings), space (parks and other open spaces) and paths (movement pattern) (see Table 3.1). Tangible components also involve the natural environment such as earth, sea and sky (Relph, 1976; Rapoport, 1977; Pocock, 1978). Attributes related to aesthetics of the environment can be identified as height, size, shape, colour, architectural style, material, richness, façade, decoration, and design. Physical environment also includes the natural features, and Rapoport (1977, p. 8) states that physical environment includes '*all natural features of geography, climate and the resources of the environment'.*

The intangible features of the physical environment signify a sensory dimension, such as smell, sounds, feelings, which significantly contribute to the physical characteristics in the creation of sense of place and identity. Ryden (1993, p. 38) stresses that the physical nature of place is '*grounded in those aspects of the environment which we appreciate through the senses…the feel of the wind, the sounds and scents carried by that wind'*. Therefore, the non-visual component is considered an important aspect associated with the essence of place in urban design (Carmona et al., 2010; Sepe, 2013).

Table 3.1: Tangible elements of physical environments.

	Natural (Form & Detail)	**Built (Form & Detail)**
Masses	Land form, topography, crowds, vegetation	Structure, contouring, vehicles, landscaping, public art, street furniture, public utilities
Spaces	Agricultural land, plains, valleys, scenic and historic, places, water areas	Recreational areas, park areas, squares, plazas, malls, parking lots, yards, vacant lands, terminal areas
Paths	Rivers, streams/gullies, ridges, canyons	Expressways, parkways, streets, roads, alleys, railways, subways, bridges, tunnels, walkways, trails, bicycle paths.

Source: Greene, (1992, p. 178).

In principle, the physical aspects have been given the most focus in urban design. Shields (2013) articulates that physical features from a space and affect the nature of the created place. Likewise, Stedman (2003, p. 674) asserts that the physical environment itself as a component of the place significantly contributes to a place. He emphasises that '*place is constructed mainly through being imbued in the setting rather than formed via experience'*. At this point, this research considered the physical features as one important determinism of place identity and gives the research a basis in examining the phenomena as an everyday lived experience. This will be demonstrated by identifying the distinctive features of the environment as perceived by people.

3.3.1 Imageability

This section describes the significance of image as a source of environmental knowledge. Indeed, the image has a close relationship with cognition and perception and is hence a key element of place identity (Lynch, 1960). According to Moore (1976, p. 4), '*…image is a mental representation of those parts of reality which is known through direct or indirect experience, thus grouping the various environmental attributes which are then combined according to certain rules'*. Therefore, the image represents ideas, knowledge and beliefs that the individual forms through past, present and future from the surrounding environment and the consequent actions, whether are negative or positive. Pocock et al. (1978,

p. 19) referred to the image as *'the sum of direct sensory interaction as interpreted through the observer's value system'*. In this respect, the urban image can be seen as a first stage of the cognition process towards knowing the environment.

However, the process of cognition involves not only an abstraction of the composition of the image on the eye retina that displays the constant stream of the perceived image but also the way individuals deal with those scenes, which is highly significant. Observers reform the perceived images encountered as visual impressions by filtering and organising these external stimuli into a complete and stable image in their mind and memory (Dember, 1960). Likewise, Relph (1976, p. 106) notices that images are '*…not just selective abstractions of an objective reality but are intentional interpreting of what is or what is not believed to be'*. This suggests that the mental image not only represents the distinctive physical environment as articulated by Lynch (1960). In addition, the recreation of this impression formed by a person depends largely on the ability of that observer's senses, mentality, culture and socio-economic background. It also depends on their temperament and psycho-neurological condition when seeing that place or phenomena (Rasmussen, 1964).

THE ENVIRONMENT

THE OBSERVER

- Distinctions
- Relations
- Stimulus

Two-way processes

- Select
- Organise
- Endow with meaning
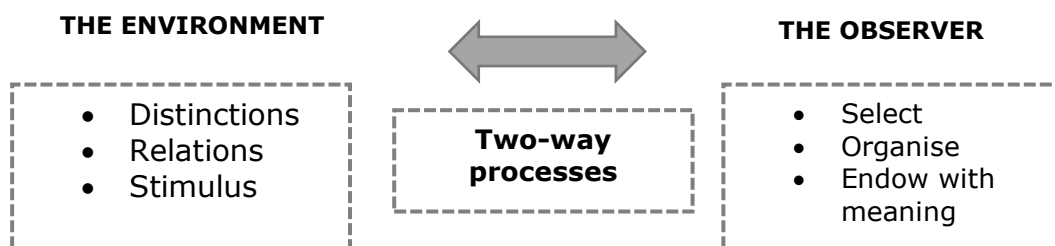
Figure 3.3: Place image by the author adapted from Lynch (1960).

Imageable places tend to be distinctive, recognisable and memorable. Imageable places through their physical elements can capture individuals' attention, impressions and evoke their feelings (Ewing et al., 2006, p. 226). Hence, it can be argued that the degree of imageability or the ability of elements to be recalled or remembered by a person can contribute to maintaining place

identity. Lynch (1960) identifies five physical elements that form the urban image, namely paths, edges, nodes, districts and landmarks. For Nasar (1998), the degree of attitude towards the visual environment such as whether people like it or dislike is an important source of insight for enhancing the urban image. In this respect, imageable features are not only easily recalled for visual aspects but also due to the inclusion of specific meanings or feelings (Carmon et al., 2010). This is linked to Twigger (1994) who noted that memorable features of a physical environment being unique distinguish one place from another and offers greater identification with a social group as less similar to others. In respect to this, it can be argued that recognizable features have an ability to identify place character as seen and felt by its inhabitants (see also Green, 1999).

The features may be derived through answering questions such as why the features or elements are indicated as distinctive. Therefore, this research is concentrated on the resident's perception of the city as an inhabitant of that city, as they have a longer experience with that place. In addition, this kind of perception is currently still neglected in the environmental planning and design, particularly in Libyan cities.

3.3.2 Distinctive Environment

In an urban design context, attributes of the physical environment associated with place identity are those that are distinctive and easily remembered and noticed by individuals (Lynch, 1960). Furthermore, identifiable features imply distinction from other objects, which make an object easily recognised as a separate entity (Lynch, 1984). In environmental psychology research, stimulus often refers to the recognisable features of elements of the environment (Moore, 1979). This suggests that place identity refers to '*the extent to which a person can recognise or recall a place as being distinct from other places as having a vivid, or unique, or at least a particular character of its own'* (Lynch, 1960, p. 131). This implies that perception is associated with identity in the presence of distinct characteristics that are recognised by people.

For Vignoles et al. (2000, p. 337), the distinctiveness principle was the most important aspect for measuring place identity, as *'distinctiveness is necessary for the construction of meaning within the identity'*. This suggests that the distinctiveness principle can be used as a measurement tool to predict the elements of the physical form that are associated with place identity (see also, Kyle et al., 2013; Proshansky et al., 1983; Twigger-Ross et al., 2003).

However, places have been understood to be a part of the perception process and they are always undergoing change. Place distinctiveness is transformed based on the changing living style, social desires, cultural values and experience, as they differ from person to person. Furthermore, what may be considered valuable today for people, may not have the same level of significance tomorrow. Therefore, this study aims to understand the connection between distinctive features of place and its interrelated qualities that make them identifiable. The significance of this research in this regard is to investigate the influence of the physical environment on the residents' perceptions within the Libyan context. Evidence from the Misurata study reported in this thesis, among other factors, will contribute to the ongoing argument about the role of perceiving distinctive features on promoting and enhancing place identity. This will be examined by answering the first research question of 'how places can evoke people's perceptions'.

3.4 Urban place quality

The literature review suggests that the physical environment involves characteristics related to 'spatial qualities'. In urban design, many scholars have addressed how places become successful or how they are made into creative places. In this regard, urban place quality is the term that has largely been used to identify how places over time can be managed and enhanced to meet the multidimensional requirements of a city (economic, social, culture, psychology and so on). *'Urban design is a process of making better places for people than would otherwise be produced'* (Carmona et al, 2010, p. 3). Thus, it is important

to determine what the qualities are that would lead a place to be considered successful.

In urban design literature, the quality of place has been conceptualised in several different ways such as good city form (Lynch, 1984), successful cultural quarters (Montgomery, 2003), urban quality (Chapman and Larkham, 1999) and design quality (Carmona et al., 2002). Tibbalds et al. (1993) in their study of London's urban environment quality suggested eight inter-related key aspects as useful core qualities for urban design and place making (Figure 3.4). Writing of urban street qualities, Jacobs (1961) articulated a number of key aspects that make livable streets: safety, public contact, a mixture of uses, and diversity of ingredients, with four conditions: mixed-use districts, a variation of building age, short blocks, and sufficient density. Lynch (1984), identifies five basic elements of city performance: 'vitality', 'sense', 'fit', 'access', and 'control', while Jacobs and Appleyard (1987) proposed an 'Urban Design Manifesto' with the aim of improving the quality of future urban environment through seven indicators: liveability; identity and control; access to opportunity; imagination; enjoyment; authenticity, and meaning; open communities and public life; self-reliance; and justice.
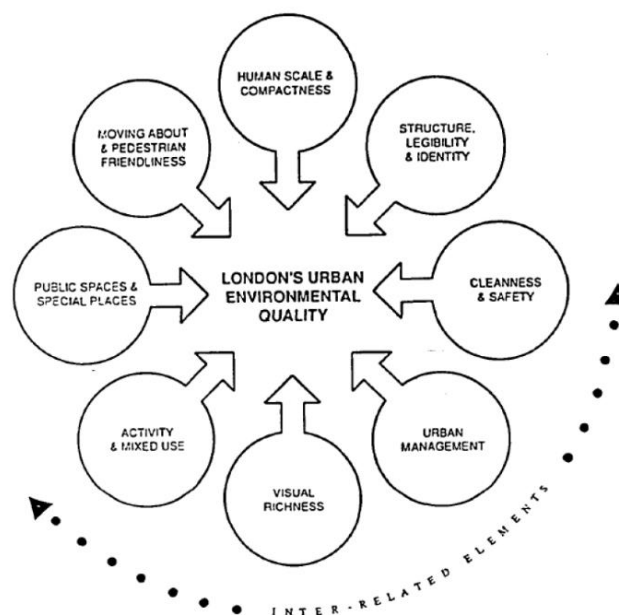
Figure 3.4: Quality of London's environment. Source: Tibbalds et al. (1993, p. 22).

Montgomery (2003, p. 293), who introduced the term cultural quarter, argued that *'great cities have identifiable quarters to which artists and cultural entrepreneurs are attracted'*. On their attempt to scale how individuals perceive their environments and better understand what individual's value in their environments, Ewing and Handy (2009, p. 66) summarise a list of 60 perceptual qualities as the most significant qualities that emerged in the current literature (see Table 3.2).

Table 3.2: Perceptual qualities of place suggested by Ewing and Handy (2006).

adaptability	distinctiveness	Intricacy	richness
ambiguity	diversity	Legibility	sensuousness
centrality	dominance	Linkage	singularity
clarity	enclosure	Meaning	spaciousness
coherence	expectancy	Mystery	territoriality
compatibility	facility	Naturalness	texture
comfort	formality	Novelty	transparency
complementarity	human scale	Openness	unity
complexity	identifiability	Ornateness	upkeep
continuity	imageability	prospect	variety
contrast	intelligibility	refuge	visibility
deflection	interest	regularity	vividness
depth	intimacy	rhythm	authenticity
order	friendliness	walkability	aesthetic
liveability	accessibility	control	Likability

Source: Ewing and Handy (2006, p. 66).

Although quality of place plays an important role in creating successful places (Madanipour, 1997), it is still hard to define or measure the indicators of urban quality (Florida, 2002). Urban qualities are multiple and complex, making them difficult to capture (Trip, 2007). Carmona et al. (2007), therefore, suggest that it is useful to develop a holistic approach combining both substantive and procedural qualities of urban place to achieve quality in urban places. Overall, the urban qualities are important because they are concerned with people's experience and enhancement of life. Thus, in our contemporary society, *'there are yes/no answers in urban design whether there are better and worse answers* [...] *the quality of urban place is not limited to certain time...Quality of urban place can only be known over time'* (Carmona et al. 2007, p. 1).

In urban design research, a specific model of urban quality has often been utilised to study a phenomenon; however, in this study, the quality of place that contributes to reinforcing place identity is that which has emerged from the data analysis based on the residents' perceptions. In other words, the general approach is to measure these qualities in a case study of Misurata and identify detailed physical features associated with each perceived quality. These qualities will later play a potential role in indicating the features associated with place identity in this study.

3.5 Meanings

Meanings are considered by many authors as a key element that strongly contributes to constructing place identity (Rapoport, 1977, 1990; Relph, 1976; Pipkins 1983; Harrison and Howard, 1982; Lynch, 1960; Gulick 1963; Appleyard, 1969; Montgomery, 1998; Green, 1999). According to these authors, meaning is one of the three components of place and probably the most difficult one to grasp, but it also plays a vital role in place identity (Rapoport 1977, 1990, Relph, 1976 Pipkins 1983, Harrison and Howard 1982, Lynch 1960, Gulick 1963, Appleyard 1969, Montgomery, 1998, Green, 1999). Meaning is also central to individuals' perception of the environment (Nasar, 1998, p. 8). Therefore, in this study, it was necessary to consider the meaning factor alongside the two other dimensions (perpetual and attachment) to examine the place identity.

Meanings can be manifested through lived experience (Relph, 1976; Ryden, 1993; Tuan, 1977,) or through symbols that places encompass (Stedman, 2003b), or through the degree of familiarity that people established with a place (Lynch, 1977). Pipkins (1983) argued that meanings could be a subjective matter manifested both at the psychological and socio-cultural level. Hence, meanings can be manifested in the urban environment through different ways whether objectively (e.g., symbols) or subjectively (e.g., past memory, experience, event, culture). Meanings are considered in this research because they are a very close subject to place identity and place attachment.

3.5.1 Meanings and Physical Environment

In general, meanings are '*not intrinsic to the physical setting itself, but rather they reside in the human interpretations of the setting, which are constructed through experience with it'* (Stedman, 2003, p. 672). In humanist geography, meaning refers to the social factor as a human's lived experience. For example, Tuan (1977) maintains that spaces become places as they become imbued with meaning through lived experience. This idea has been accepted by Ryden (1993, pp. 37-38) when he asserts that '*a place takes in the meanings, which people assign to that landscape through the process of living in it'*. Drawing on the genius loci theory, Stedman (2003, p. 674) argues that the meanings are manifested through physical environment attributes, shaped through people's experiences, '*which are in turn associated with evaluations such as attachment'*. Hence, people feel attached to places through meanings they have constructed from them and thus, the symbolic meanings are reinforced by the physical environment. Downs and Stea (1973) also argue that physical features of the environment may carry connotations of a certain memory, sentiments, attitude, or beliefs. This suggests that place identity '*is based on symbolic meanings attributed to the setting'* (Stedman, 2003, p. 672).

3.5.2 Meaning and Attachment

In many cases, meanings and attachment overlap and are used interchangeably. In addition, it has been widely argued that an individual's perception effectively depends on the meanings attached to the stimuli. For example, Stedman (2002) and Russell and Ward (1992) refer to meanings as the cognition dimension of the setting as valued by the individual, while, more akin to psychology, they used the human perception as a key factor for attachment to a place (see Low and Altman, 1992; Williams et al, 1992). This implies that both place attachment and meaning are understood from a symbolic perspective.

Furthermore, symbols are a sign for meanings and in turn, they promote attachment to that object or sign. For instance, Stedman (2002b, p. 563) described this relationship in terms of an emotional bond when they stated that *'we are being attached to the symbols we attribute to our places as home, as friendly, as dangerous and seek to preserve meanings that we value and which produce attachment'*. This suggests that place attachment and meaning are related concepts, which both arise from the recognition and knowledge factors of the environment.

A recent study by Wynveen et al. (2012) involved an investigation into the association between the persons' attachment and the meaningfulness of environment, where it was concluded that the meaning types contribute to the strength of place attachment to the setting. They also indicate that although the place attachment and place meaning have a similar idea, very few researchers took both into account in response to their research questions (ibid). In this study, the primary emphasis is to see how meanings and place attachment interrelates in the conceptualisation of place identity.

3.5.3 Types of Meanings

Rapoport (1990b, as in Nasar, 1998) identifies three types of meanings for the environmental image. These are denotative meanings referring to the recognition of the object; connotative meanings referring to the emotional factor associated with the object; and abstract meaning, referring to the broader values rather than to the object itself. When a person recognises an object as a supermarket, he or she experiences a donative meaning, and this includes other everyday visible meanings identifying the intended use. When a person evaluates their feelings about the place, such as the friendliness or likeability of the trader or to what extent they like the design of the building, they experience connotative meanings. When a person looks at a place as *'… culture schemata, worldviews, philosophical systems and the sacred'* (Rapoport, 1990b, p. 221), they form abstract meanings. This research stresses connotative meanings

because of their relevance to the environmental cognition and at the same time donates the emotional values in the way one can evaluate a certain feeling to the object. When connotative meanings have the capacity to evoke people's perceptions, it may affect their feelings, influencing thereby their level of attachment to the place.

3.5.4 Factors Influencing Meanings

3.5.4.1 Symbolic Meanings

Literature shows that places often associated with meanings through symbols. Furthermore, in geography for instance, symbols refer to 'signs', which embody feelings and experience (Rapoport, 1982a, p. 43). Symbolic connotations of a place often referred to the source for individual and group identity and that gives meaning to the purpose of life, in relation to one's well-being and reflecting the sense of belonging and social experience (Shamai, 1991). In this respect, Relph (1976) and Tuan (1977) regard meaning as a significant component of place experience and perception. The experience deals with the visual appearance and symbolic features of place (Relph, 1976; Tuan, 1977).

According to Carmona et al. (2010, p. 119), symbols are a sign by which one knows or infers a things. Hence, meanings often refer to symbols or visible components that reflect the values or ideas or even in some cases, the ideology of political, cultural, and social representations. Accordingly, '*the power of these landmarks derives from repetitive representational practices operating through various mediums such as books, postcards, paintings, media, tourist guides, etc.*' (Golan, 2015, p. 721). Steadman (2003) noted that the physical features influence the symbolic meanings of the landscape. Hence, the city as a place is also a centre of meaning and a visible expression of people's value systems, beliefs, ideas, hopes, and fears (Downs and Stea, 1973; Tuan, 1977).

3.5.4.2 Culture

Meanings involve cultural dimensions associated with the environment (Gustafson, 2001). Cultural characteristics are a social process in which people produce meaning to give themselves a sense of identity (Cohen, 1994). The cultural factor imbued in people's lifestyles are essential in constructing meanings as well as place identity (Lai et al., 2013). Spaces will become places at the point where the cultural characteristics merge with the person's cultural desires (Bott et al., 2003). Therefore, making places isolated from their cultural characteristics will possibly produce less meaningful places, i.e. a place lacking strong identity. In this regard, it can be argued that culture is an essential aspect of meanings that should be considered in designing new places. For example, a house cannot be a home unless it mirrors the culture and way of life of its dwellers.

It is evident from the literature that culture plays an important role in perceiving the physical environment features and qualities as having a significant role in associating a place with a certain identity. This implies that different cultures perceive identity differently because of the meanings and associations attached to a place. This variation in perceiving the meanings of the physical environment can be associated with factors such as beliefs and religions, values, norms, customs, and mode of appropriate behaviour constituting a cluster of characteristics (Altman and Chemers, 1984). In the case of a Muslim society, such as in Libya, it is understood that cultural principles play an important role in defining community identity, therefore influencing the character and identity of the place they inhabit. In this study, the reasons given for recalling and recognising distinctive physical elements that are not related to the physical or characteristics are categorised under meanings.

3.5.4.3   Likable Environment

Unlike Lynch (1960), who sees the city image as having three components of identity, structure and meanings, Nasar (1998, p. 8) argues that people also have feelings and associations, both positive and negative about their environment. According to him, these feelings and meanings are defined by 'evaluative image' of a place. In this respect, places tend to be recalled by people because of the feelings they have. These feelings and emotions contribute to the meanings in which they define place identity based on the relationship between the person and a place. Thus, emotions and meanings are also central to humans' perceptions of their environment and places may be recalled because they evoke certain feelings, memories and meanings.

Sentiments such as ugly, beautiful, pleasant, attractive, safe and so on are commonly used in the recent literature to identify meanings associated with the town's character as held by population (Green, 1999, 2010). Green (1999) observed strong evidence of the significance of the evaluation approach in measuring the meanings of the town character, leading him to conclude that evaluation is a useful tool for further exploration of these concepts, which advocates this method for measuring meanings.

Therefore, it can be argued that measuring the meanings through only symbolic features or urban image is insufficient. The human feelings, experience, and knowledge need to be added as a measurable tool of meaningful places. In this respect, in this research, in order to reveal certain meanings about those that are distinctive and that are able to evoke a certain amount of reaction to the respondents, questions that related to the evaluation of the city centre of Misurata were addressed in the questionnaire. Hence, questions that were put forward concern people's visual appraisal of the place in terms of their likes and dislikes, the part of the town centre that they thought should be retained and what could be improved to make the town centre attractive.

3.5.4.4   Place Memory

People associate with places through individual and collective memories that happened during their lives or actions or events that took place in history and therefore, belong to the society's memories. Events that occurred in a place during a formulation process (Conway, 1997) or currently taking place, i.e. belonging to contemporary times, (Liu and Hilton, 2005) can be significantly assigned to place memories (ibid). Although the research on place memory is often related to meanings through social memories (Basabe, 2013), or domestic histories (Devine-Wright and Lyons, 1997; Liu and Hilton, 2005), in this study the focus is on the memory of the city centre as a specific place in both past and present memories.

Important shared events or memories that can provoke individuals' or society's perceptions can be used as a predictor for meanings. Appleyard (1969), in his work 'why buildings are known', found that the most indicated reasons referred to the distinctiveness of the physical, which serves as icons for meanings that contribute significantly to one's place identity. In this respect, Hull et al. (1994, p. 118) argued that distinctive features 'icons' '*evoke the valued memories and/or other associations, and thereby evoke meanings and sense of place*'. This implies that physical features become meaningful to observe when they are used as a moral sign of a particular historical, political or social event that concerns society.

Accordingly, memory connotation is a very important aspect in generating meanings to places. It can be argued, therefore, that people tend to have little desire in retaining physical features unless they are important to them (Lynch, 1960). According to Mowla (2004, p. 1), '*area between and within an object is space that becomes a place when occupied by a person, thing or any other attributes and the remembrance of an event or events is a valuable identifier of space*'. This remembrance is formed by personal experience and knowledge of spaces. Othman et al. (2013), in their review of place memory of a city centre, pointed out that there are three mechanisms of remembrance of place, which

enable individuals to perceive a place through memory association, namely individual or group factors, physical factors and social factors (see Table 3.3).

Table 3.3: The influence factors of memory association in place making.

Component (Individual/ Group)	Attributes	Descriptions
Physical factors	Demographic Socioeconomic status Location and scale (spatial attributes)	Age, gender and ethnic Length of residence, home ownership, employment status Building, monument
Social factors	Geographical perspectives Place experiences	Availability and accessibility and exposure to history (public, marketable, infamous), Events & designed events: People's experiences with places Setting: Permanent (memorial, ritual) or temporary (festival, fair)

(Source: Othman et al. 2013, p. 558).

An important social or political event has also the ability to totally transform a space and completely change the way a meaningless site is seen. It alters dramatically the perception of a site so that it is not merely seen as space but as a place of fascination. In Misurata, some of the examples acting as signifiers are Martyrs Hall, Tripoli Street, Flag State Roundabout, the Historical Castel Building, and Tanpoor Building. They are collective identifications because of their history and events significant to the residence. After the 2011 rebellion that took place in Libya, known as the 'Arabic Spring', expressions of democracy, gathering to demonstrate and events that occurred during the war in the city centre now have an important value due to the memory associations of what took place in early 2011. This type of event has the ability to transform a landscape quickly and instantly.

3.5.4.5 Life Stage and Place Meaning

As a part of the place experience, one important aspect of person-place relationships is the 'life stage' or 'life cycle' (Tuan, 1977; Gustafson, 2001; Smaldone at el. 2005; Lewicka, 2008; Morgan, 2010). Smaldone at el. (2001, p. 403) observed that the experiences associated with time '*create not just an emotional attachment to place but places can become even more significant in helping to actually define a significant life stage for a person*'. This implies that experiences, memories, specific actions, and other associations that individuals developed with place through one's stage of life can influence one's relationship with places and thus their meanings (Rubinstein and Parmelee, 1992). Ujang (2014) noted that people develop a strong relationship with places that they used to visit with their parents in the city centre during childhood due to feeling those places as a part of their personal life. Similarly, Smaldone et al. (2005, p. 403) observed that places become 'a marker' of one's life because they become a container and remainder of that part of one's life and identity (see also Korpela, 1989; Twigger-Ross & Uzzell, 1996). These meaning connotations with places help to evoke people's perceptions and establish who they are through the continuity connection with a place throughout their lives. Drawing on recent findings in environmental psychology theory, Morgan (2010) suggests that people build their relationships with place through an integration process from childhood to old age. Hence, continuity is one aspect of place meanings where places become linked to one's life path through a series of important events and frequent visits and thus, '*it is an important aspect of 'self' related meanings of place*' (Gustafson, 2001, p. 13).
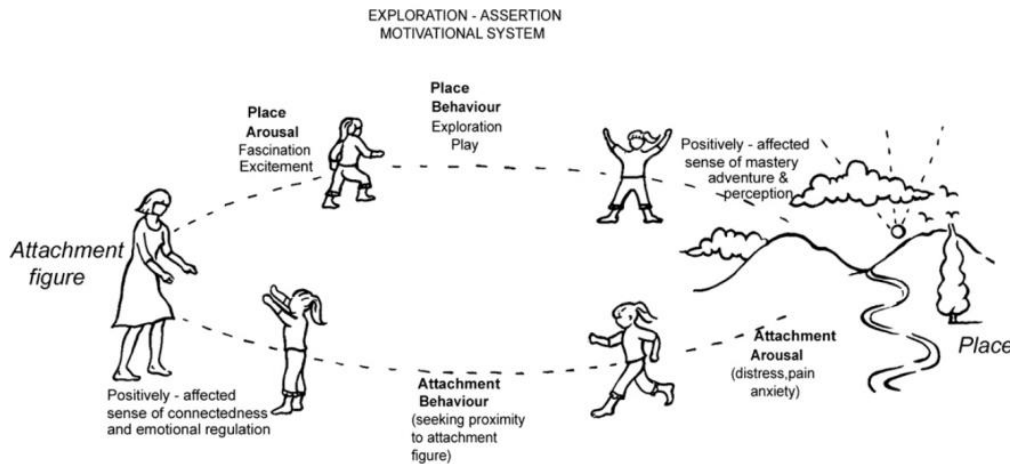
Figure 3.5: Integrated model of person-places relationships (Source: Morgan, 2010, p. 14).

3.6 Place Attachment

Although the most widespread definition of place identity used by multi-disciplinary researchers is that introduced by Proshansky, et al. (1983), they do not theorise the concept of place identity on the emotional bond with place (see Speller, 2000). Instead, others such as Giulian (1991) and Twigger (1994), state that place identity and place attachment are linked at the emotional core, a tie to a place, such as a home. Although place identity and place attachment are linked, this research considers both of them as integrated concepts in creating unique places. The following sections attempt to illustrate the notion of place attachment and how it relates to place identity.

In the urban design field, there has been much research focusing on examining place identity through trying to capture the relationship between person-place relationships; however, unlike environmental psychology, researchers have not treated the emotional dimension in much detail. Most work on place identity research to date has tended to focus on the objective part rather than the subjective side. In this study, attention has been given to include the emotional dimension in examining place identity. This section, therefore, highlights various definitions of place attachment and theories which, explicitly

or implicitly, explore potential similarities between close attachment to people and their places.

3.6.1 Definitions

Essentially, the term place attachment refers to 'affective bond' between people (individuals or group) and a significant environmental, which is developing over time (Scannell and Gifford, 2010). However, due to *'the proliferation of concepts and measurements proposed for characterising emotional bonds between humans and places'* (Manzo and Devine-Wright, 2014, p. 125), place attachment has diverse definitions. These definitions '*remain scattered in the literature, and thus the clear definition of the concept has not yet been acknowledged, nor has a more general definition of place attachment been agreed upon'* (Scannell and Gifford, 2010, p. 2). This section, therefore, reviews various definitions of place attachment, which are explicitly based on place identity, in order to extract an appropriate understanding of its potential to place identity as a significant concept in this research.

One question that needs to be asked, in this case, is whether place identity requires an emotional bond to a place to develop or reverse, i.e. whether individuals have to first develop an attachment to a place before they can evolve an identification to it. It is useful to begin to form the broader picture towards defining place attachment in relation to place identity.

Originally, the earliest introduction of place attachment was through phenomenological studies in the 1970s. However, the first mature definition of place attachment was coined by Low and Altman (1992), who provided the theoretical foundation inspiring subsequent studies in this area. In their edited book on 'Place Attachment', they stressed that:

'Place attachment is an integrating concept that involves patterns of attachments (affect, cognition, and practice); places that vary in scale,

specificity, and tangibility; different actors (individuals, groups, and cultures); social relationships (individuals, groups and cultures); and temporal aspects'.

They also articulated the significance of place attachment for environmental design and research, which '*…lay the foundation for a conceptual framework to guide future research'* (p. 2). Since then, there has been an increasing amount of discourse on the importance of place attachment and related to other constructs such as place identity, and meanings (Bonaiuto at el., 2016).

Terminologies such as place dependence, place identity, sense of place, rootedness, sense of belonging, community attachment among others have been used widely and interchangeably with the concept of place attachment. However, this has been vigorously challenged, in recent years, by a number of writers through integrating different perspectives and methods (Giuliani and Feldman, 1993; Giuliani, 1991). In addition, the concept of place attachment itself is a multifaceted concept. Giuliani (1991) argues that because of the diversity of person-place bond (e.g. individuals, groups, social, life stages, variation, culture, temporal), the study of an effective bond to a place was only established in the early 1990s. In recent works, many authors have focused on the conceptualisation of place attachment related to these concepts; however, studies linking place identity with attachment to place are still not addressed to contribute substantially to the body of research, as noticed by Lewicka (2008b).

3.6.2 Place Attachment and Place Identity

Some authors maintain that place attachment is related equally with place identity (e.g. Hernandez et al., 2007, Giuliani, 2003, Bricker and Kerstetter, 2000, Twigger, 1994, Rollero and De Piccoli, 2010), that is to say, place identity has an emotional core, such as a home and objects in the home. Just as a child may form an emotional attachment to his or her parents, human beings also form attachments to things or places around them (Lewicka, 2010; Morgan, 2009). This is an evaluative process between people and places that span over a lifetime; it describes to what extent place hold meaning for people. Thus, it can

be argued that place identity can be manifested by the emotional bond to a place. On the other hand, others consider the conceptualisation of identity in the way it is formed by the places (Moore, 2000) or by self-identity (Proshansky et al., 1983). Nevertheless, in most cases, the cognition factor can play an important role in the determinism of the relationship between place identity and attachment.

Proshansky et al. (1983), in his discussions of place identity theory, interestingly, clarified the connection between place identity and place attachment, conceptualising the notion of place identity '*... as groups of positive and negative perceptions assessed for physical settings*'. Considering the cognition factor, according to them, place attachment is described as place belongingness, which occurs as a result of positive cognition to the settings, as they state that '*place-belongingness undoubtedly occurs in those individuals whose place-identity involves positively valenced cognitions of one or some combination of these settings, which far outweigh the number of negatively valenced cognitions*'. This suggests that place identity and place attachment are linked in terms of cognition, which are relevant to this research project and will be discussed also in the place identity definition section. In regards to this, place identity and place attachment are both considered as being a part of an individual's and group's identity.

In contrast, Stedman (2003) develops a slightly different viewpoint to Proshansky's idea, which defines place attachment as an objective factor for determining the sense of place. He argues that symbolic meanings have resulted from the characteristics experience of the environment, and those meanings, in turn, produce place attachment and satisfaction. According to him, place attachment often refers to bonds that people usually develop with a specific place where the satisfaction has occurred, and also place attachment subsequent to place identity. Stedman (2003) found that the experiences of the physical environment contribute to the construction of symbolic meanings that people associate with, which strengthens through the degree of place attachment and

satisfaction. Nevertheless, referring again to Proshansky's et al. (1983) definition, cognition may help to explain the relationship between physical characteristics and place attachment, as satisfaction is part of the positive attitude to the setting.

While Proshansky et al. (1983) argue that place attachment can occur at both a positive or a negative level, Belk (1992) links place attachment with place identity through only positive emotions. He clearly states that *'to be attached to certain of our surroundings is to make them a part of our extended self... possessions involve the extended self only when the basis for attachment is emotional rather than simply functional'* (p. 38). In this case, it can be presumed that identity can be built before the emotional bond that a person associated with a place. In the other words, there is no place identity without a sense of attachment to a place. In respect to this, place attachment can take many forms.

Place attachment has also been said to rely on perception through experience, meaning that effectiveness and cognition occur through experiencing the place, and in turn, this may influence the person's perception. Moreover, *'home is generally associated with the sense of safety and comfort, which displays a home as a place with positive emotions and meanings'* (Kaymaz, 2013, p. 743). For humanistic geographers, these positive emotions are formed and developed through lived experience with a place (Relph, 1976). Accordingly, place attachment and place identity is primarily associated with meanings that arise through the course of life. Likewise, Shamai (1991) states that *'identity combines with the meaning of the place and its symbols to create a personality of the place'*. This implies that people become attached to places because of what they mean to them and this enables them to distinguish their identity from others.

Bearing the above arguments in mind, however, in line with Lewicka (2008b), this study assumes that place identity and place attachment are two different concepts and at the same time, they may influence each other. Apart from the cognitive and affective factors, place identity may reinforce place

attachment through distinctive features and symbolic meanings, with the former often being a sign of the latter (Stedman, 2003). This is highlighted by Kyle et al. (2013) argument when they assert that, to conceptualise place attachment based on the cognitive factor, and thus, it can be argued that place attachment and place identity are related to the identification process resulting from cognitive mechanisms of meanings.

In this regard, the cognitive factors refer to the meanings and concepts that are understood by people in a place. Therefore, place attachment not only results from affection with a place, but also it has a cognitive structure where an individual attaches himself/herself to concepts and meanings of a place. In this case, place identity is an emotional bonding between people and places created through cognition.

3.6.3   Place Attachment Model

With the intention of integrating a variety of definitions of place attachment, in their recent work, Scannell and Gifford (2010) propose a framework for place attachment based on the literature review, which consists of a multidimensional structure driven by three main factors: people-process-place (PPP) (see Figure 3.3). These three dimensions were elicited from three critical questions:

1) *'Who is attached?* This is according to the person factor, where attachment to place can create individually and collectively held meanings.
2) *What effect does it have?* The psychological process contains the *'effective', 'cognitive', and 'behavioural'* mechanisms of attachment, which is based on attitude theory (See, Jorgensen and Stedman, 2001).
3) *And what is the attachment to?'* The place category or dimension, which includes both the social and physical attachment.

According to this framework, the individual level of place attachment can be influenced by personal memories and experiences whereas sharing experience, symbolic meanings, and historical values of a place can be built at group level. The nature of place, according to them, in physical and social togetherness, plays an important role in place attachment*, as 'people are attached to places that facilitate social relationships and group identity'*. The psychological process

involves three components: affective factors (emotional connection), cognition (memories, beliefs, meaning and knowledge), and behaviour (attachment is expressed through actions).Hence, they describe place attachment as '*a bond between an individual or group and a place that can vary in terms of spatial level, degree of specificity and social or physical features of the place, and is manifested through affective, cognitive, and behavioural psychological process'* (Scannell and Gifford, 2010, p. 5).
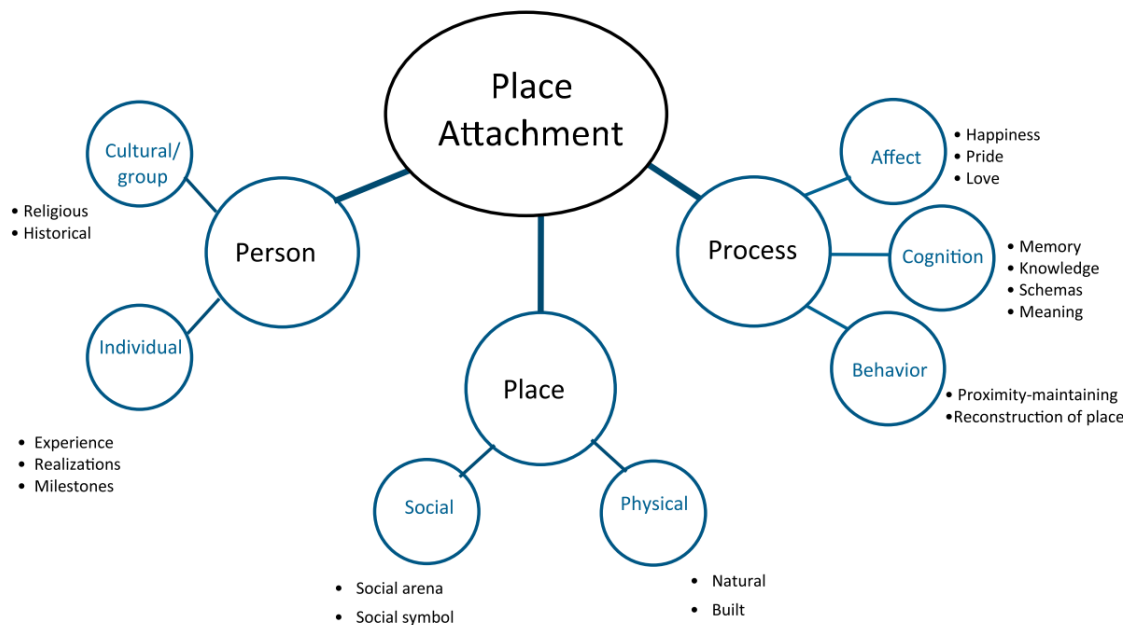
Figure 3.6: The tripartite model of place attachment. Source: (Scannell & Gifford, 2010, p. 2).

Whilst this framework provides a comprehensive definition of place attachment, framing the existing different views, it still does not fully explain how a person copes with changes to the physical settings of places. In her widely cited paper, Lewicka (2011) states that the tripartite model of place attachment put forward by Scannell and Gifford (2010) does not explain in depth how the place attachment process is developed. According to her, much emphasis was on the person part in favour to the place; therefore, the mechanisms used enabling development of attachment to place are largely ignored. Subsequently, this research deals with place attachment and place identity by asking residents

to rate or identify place features that they feel attached with and the reasons behind their attitudes (Droseltis and Vignoles, 2010).

3.6.4 Factors Influencing Place Attachment

3.6.4.1 Social and Physical Attachment

The following sections discuss the role of these two dimensions (physical and social) on attachment to place as they appear in the literature in order to clarify the most relevant definition of place attachment for this study.

From the literature review, particularly in place attachment research, the majority of assumptions consider that the physical and social dimensions have separate roles in the way we feel attached to a place. For example, it has commonly been assumed that people may feel attached to a place because of the close bond of the neighbourhood, ancestral rootedness, or powerful religious symbols e.g., Mecca for Muslim people. On the other hand, in terms of physical properties, people may feel attached to beautiful places (natural or built), or to the presence of a stimulus that is presented by the environment that meets their psychological or social needs.

'*The basic definition of place as that of a meaningful location is general enough to demand more specific definitions'* (Lewicka, 2011, p. 209). Accordingly, place has a social domain, but also more obviously has a physical basis. The consideration of both elements of people and place is essential in urban design. For instance, some may argue that physical environment has a meaning only when it has been socially constructed (Burley, 2007). In respect to this, one question to bear in mind once again, as already discussed previously in place definition, is whether we shape the physical environment that we feel attached to or the physical environment is a product that results from several factors combined together (e.g. social, climate, economic, religious etc.), created through a long social process and interaction where we become attached to the physical features of a setting. Carmona et al. (2010) describe the people- place

relationship as *'a two-way process in which people create and modify spaces while at the same time being influenced in various ways by those spaces'* (p. 133).

Originally, the consideration of a social dimension was the most prominent in the place attachment research rather than the physical dimension. A possible explanation for this might be the inconsistency between the concepts that contained the phenomenon place and its associations. Lewicka (2011) argues that the interest in the social side often holds drawbacks in the overlap between place attachment and sense of place, which has typically been understood as socially constructed rather than a physical output of a cognitive process embedded in physical characteristics of the setting. In line with this, Jorgensen and Stedman (2001) observe that sense of place is probably the comprehensive most concept, which subsumes other concepts of person-place relationships such as meanings, place attachment and place identity (see also Hunziker et al., 2007). On the other hand, physical features have a potentially crucial role in attachment to place, which has been less considered. The physical component is not just a three dimensional space containing the social actions and interactions, but also it is an independent element (Gieryn, 2000; Gustafson, 2002) that integrates parts of place and provides certain meanings that people may feel attached to. In his widely cited paper, Stedman (2003) is strongly critical of the ignorance of the physical aspects in place research.

In recent literature on place attachment, Lewicka (2011), in her remarkable review paper, noted that most researchers have focused on both physical and social dimensions as being at the same level for better understanding person-place attachment processes. However, the fact that generally higher research interested in the natural environment contributes to place attachment rather than the built environment has been largely overlooked. She reports that *'there is a sad lack of theory that would connect people's emotional bonds with the physical side of places'* (Lewicka, 2011, p. 218). It is hoped that this study will make some contributions to this particular issues. The key point is to consider

the effective level of process attachments and to what extent the physical features of the environment can reinforce these processes through perceiving urban quality or influencing factors of physical features.

3.6.4.2 Functional Attachment

For humanistic geographers, people feel attached to places that fulfil their basic needs. Attachment to places can be significantly developed once a place is well recognised and felt to be significant for the people, both in satisfying their functional needs and supporting their social objectives (Stokols and Shumaker, 1981; Williams et al., 1992). In other words, the functional attachment is defined as place dependence, in which the features and conditions of place maintenance are specific to socio-cultural goals or preferred activities (ibid). Hence, a functional attachment is often referred to as meanings at the point where the setting's physical and cultural characteristics fuse with the individual's affective perceptions (see Figure 3.7).

The functional attachment can be acquired when *'a place is well-identified and felt significant by the users and able to provide a condition to fulfil their functional needs and supports their behavioural goals better than a known alternative'* (Williams et al., 1992 cited from Ujang & Zakariya, 2015, p. 712). People may value places because they are good places for shopping, meeting, enjoying, watching, walking and so forth or because they have a comfortable environment (making the place highly valued for recreational purposes): *'It is a good place to do the activities I like to do'* (Williams and Roggenbuck, 1989, p. 3). This can apply to any areas or streets in the city centre; however, a person may or may not feel a strong attachment to settings. Giuliani (2003) stressed that place attachment may occur in a positive or negative valence, meaning that even for a lower condition of environment that can be used for a particular function people can still develop an attachment.
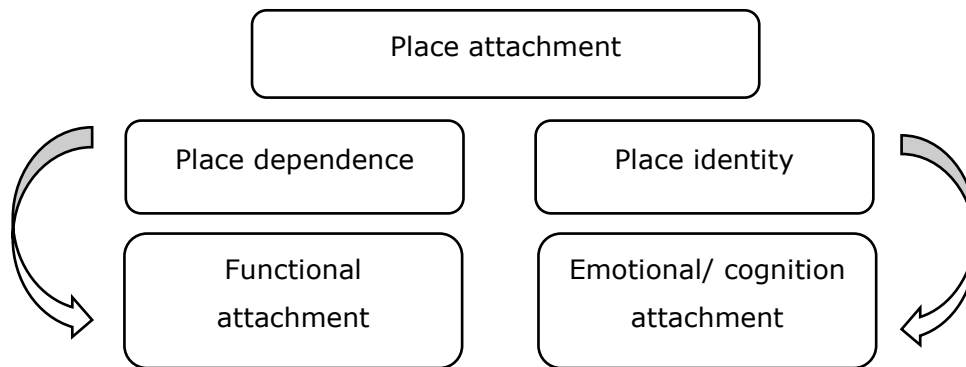
Figure 3.7: Place dependence and place attachment adapted from Williams et al (1992).

3.6.4.3 Familiarity

For humanist geographers, place attachment is often conceptualised as being akin to the degree of 'familiarity' that a person has with a setting. People feel attached to places that are familiar to them. Relph (1976, p. 37) maintains that '*in both our communal and our personal experience of places there is often a close attachment, a familiarity that is part of knowing and being known here, in this particular place. It is attachment that constitutes our roots in a place, and the familiarity that this involves is not just a detailed knowledge, but senses of deep care and concern'*. Thus, according to Relph's suggestion, familiarity can be developed from cognitive factors, and care and concern may relate to positive emotions, possibly resulting in an effect and response.

The familiarity of place can be developed through constant visits to a place, attraction and impressions, degree of comfort and ease of use as well as the degree of imageability and legibility that can enhance the recognition factor. Knowledge of a place can be seen as relating to the familiarity through perception and cognition dimensions. Referring to this idea, Ujang (2008, p. 1) examines '*the influence of place attachment and familiarity on the users' perception of the city's identity'*. Using a survey and in-depth interview in her study and focusing

on the most popular shopping streets of Kuala Lumpur city centre as a case study, Ujang's findings supported Relph's theory, as she noticed that place attachment and familiarity are strongly linked in the way they reinforce place identity through the length of involvement, activities, as well as recognisable physical features. This is in line with Lynch's (1984) theory that intense familiarity will create a sense of place. It can be inferred that time is an important factor in the construction of the sense of place that makes a place familiar and meaningful to the people. In other words, a familiar place is supposed to have a stronger meaning and attachment for the individuals.

3.6.4.4 Emotional Attachment

Emotional attachment is one of the factors that generate attachment to a place. Lewicka (2008b) argues that people often attach to a place for different emotional reasons such as friends living there, family roots from there, or religious, ethnic or national groups coming from there. For example, Lewicka (2011) asserts that *'having parents or grandparents born and raised in the city should be positively related to knowledge of the place's past'*. In this respect, Low and Altman (1992 cited from Kaymaz, 2013, p. 743) identified six theoretical typologies of place attachment, including:

1. *'Physical attachment (formed through ancestors, family heritage)*
2. *Functional attachment (ownership, working, business, etc.)*
3. *Attachment via loss or destruction of a place*
4. *Cosmological bonding (through spiritual or mythological relationship)*
5. *Bonding through religious or cultural activities*
6. *Narratives (stories, place naming, legends etc.)'*.

Since the emotional attachment is something passionate, it is not easy to be certain how it is formed in our inner minds. Some scholars argue that one may feel attached to a place for social reasons (friends, family roots, ethics, religion etc.), while others argue that it may take more than that, namely some form of social tie to incorporate the place as a part of one's self (Manzo, 2003). This

position purports that people formulate their emotional attachment when it is felt

by them to be an integral part and reflects their personal or collective identity.

In this respect, Lewicka, (2008) noted that place memory and past experience

that one had in a place during their life stages are strongly associated with

emotional factors. For Hernandez et al. (2007), the emotional attachment can

exist independent of place identification. In general, terms such as positive or

negative feelings, satisfaction, peace and love are always used to label the

emotional bond, while terms such as 'I feel this place part of me', is used to

describe place identity.

3.6.4.5 Socio Demography Characteristic

It has been pointed out several times that socio-demographic factors are

crucial in influencing attachment and perception of place identity. For example,

previous research has acknowledged several demographic factors influence place

attachment (e.g., Hidalgo and Hernández, 2001; Mesch and Manor, 1998), age

(Pretty et al., 2003), length of residence (Knez, 2005; Hay, 1998), the degree

of education (Mesch & Manor, 1998). Variables that have been studied under this

label include the length of residence, age or life cycle, gender and level of

education.

a) Length of Residence

Literature shows that length of residence in a place or city is positively

associated with place attachment (Lalli, 1992; Hay, 1998; Jorgensen and

Stedman, 2006; Lewicka, 2010). These scholars suggest that visitors or tourists

or short-term residents show a lesser awareness of place meaning and

attachment with places than those who are native residents or have roots with a

place. This is also evident in both earlier and recent studies on urban image by

Lynch (1960) when he reported that people who know the city can identify the

city in more detail rather than just generalised paths or regions. In a similar way,

recent literature suggests that residents perceive and experience the place

features and qualities clearer, more extensively and less nebulously than the visitors or newcomers. According to Stedman (2006, p. 190), '*newcomers cannot share values of the real community because they have not contributed to their creation, also they are consumers rather than creators of places, and because of the short time of encounter with the place they cannot develop attachment to it'*. He added that, '*…newcomers endanger the truth of the place by bringing in foreign ways of life'* (ibid, p. 215). Thus, place attachment and place identity increase with length of residence (see also Nielsen-Pincus at, el. 2010).

Accordingly, variables such as length of residence in a city, or having parents, or family rooted and raised in the city, could be positively related with the knowledge of that city or place's context (Lewicka, 2008). In short, it can be argued that '*people who live or work in the place are considered to have an inside point of view and those who are tourists, experts, and decision-makers have an outside point of view'* (Bernardo et al., 2016, p. 2). Therefore, the length of residence can be a useful predictor to scale the important features that are mentioned as distinctive by residents and who have assigned meanings and feel attached to certain places. The sample of data collected for this study represents the people who have lived and worked within the boundaries of Misurata since they were born or who have had long-term residence. The objective is to find out the features that are distinctive for the residents.
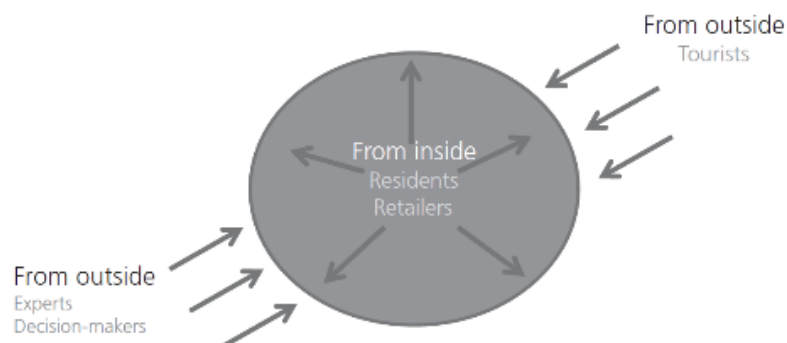
Figure 3.8: Place Identity as seen from different perspectives. Source: (Bernardo et al., 2016, p. 2).

b) Life Cycle

Literature suggests that the life cycle of a person is one of the essential factors that influence how one formulates attachment to a place. It has been constantly argued that attachment to place is a dynamic process, which may change over time, and people may always develop different feelings and experiences towards their places (Hay, 1998). Morgan (2010) elucidates that adult identity with a place is associated strongly with childhood place experience and past memories. He also states that the feelings for the places always generate and shift over time. Similarly, Brown and Perkins (1992, p. 282) argue, *'Place attachments are not static either; they change in accordance with changes in the people, activities or processes, and places involved in the attachments'*. This implies that how we see the place and how we are attached to it is something that is always undergoing change and may not stop at a certain period of time. This means that what may be valued by us today, may not be valued by us tomorrow. These changes and developments are vital aspects and part of how we experience the environment (Moore, 1976) based on a dynamic modification of affective bonds throughout a person's lifetime (Giuliani, 1991). Hence, place attachment and meanings are temporal aspects, which develop over a person's lifetime and is affected strongly by memories and experience. For this reason, in this research, questions about how residents would like to see their city in the future in order to sustain place identity have been put forward in the survey (as open-ended questions) and in the interview.

c) Gender Differences

The literature review shows that there is a striking connection between urban perceptions and gender. For example, a perceptual study by Lieberg (1994) found that males describe a place in more detail compared to females. The other study is Hidalgo and Hernandez (2001) observes that the degree of attachment varies with age and gender. These two examples seem to be consistent in their

conclusions, suggesting that males and females differ in their ways of experiencing, perceiving, and knowing places. In Libyan society specifically and the Islamic world as a whole, women appear to have a lesser experience of urban places and cities than men due to cultural and religious reasons (Elbendak, 2008). Nevertheless, the inclusion of women in the study is essential to avoid bias and to enrich desirable data that can help to answer the research questions in a valid manner. This can help to answer the question of which types of qualities are more prevalent in the experience of the place as well as the influence of demographic characteristics in influencing the strength of place identity. The study is extended to a particular type of setting in the city centre to examine how perceiving urban qualities associated with meanings and place attachment are interpreted by both genders towards the creation of place identity.

d) Level of Education

The literature review highlighted that those with higher levels of education can define the city in their description and show more accurate awareness of the place than others. For instance, Tuan (1974) stresses that as people become more educated, the more the scale of identification with places increases from the lower level scales such as purely local neighbourhood to higher level scale such as country or to regional. This means educated people appear to have wider opinions about places compared to other dwellers. However, a study by Appleyard (1969) found that lower classes of educated people identified their city in more detail and provided deeper descriptions in their drawings of the mental maps. Hence, it can be argued that in spite of the increasing levels of education in contemporary societies, the way people see, feel and attach to a city is dependent on the level of interaction with a place rather than a social class factor. One may argue, of course, that although each person has his or her own understanding of things, the level of education seems not to be a factor that strongly affects perception and attachment to place.

From the above, it can be assumed that the attachment to place and environmental perception differs from one person to another based on the socio-demographic aspects of people. Therefore, the socio-demographic aspects have been considered in this study as one vital factor to measure place identity, which was taken into consideration in the questionnaire design and the identifications of respondents in the interview.

3.6.5 Summary of Place Attachment Literature

While a variety of definitions of the term place attachment has been suggested by the current literature, the following definitions have been considered for this thesis.

Firstly, place attachment has been seen as a positive experience between person and place, which may implicitly occur based on three important factors: 'behavioural', 'affective' and 'cognition' (Brown and Perkins, 1992, p. 284). This definition has been thought as relevant to this study because, unlike many definitions, it acknowledges that place attachment involves cognitive structures that are considered a necessary step in leading to place attachment rather than looking only at the behavioural and attitudes on the basis of person-place relationships.

The second is that place attachment can be characterised under *'the human experience represented through affect-feelings, moods, emotions, etc. which people experience in various ways, forms, degrees, with varying awareness, in the reference to the places in which they are born, live and act'* (Giuliani, 2003, p. 137). This definition is relevant to this study because it asserts that the psychological factor such as feelings and emotions are an essential part of human experience, and one major objective of this study is to define place identity thought this factor.

Both Brown & Perkins' (1992) and Giuliani (2003) definitions were found to integrate human experience, emotional feeling and physical environment amongst other attachment components including affective, cognitive and behavioural in addressing the place attachment concept; therefore, this was taken as appropriate for this research.

Place attachment often refers to emotional bonds that people develop with places over time. The three components of place attachment, affective, cognitive, and behavioural, are the most frequent factors used to measure the emotional component. However, the relations between these constructs are as yet unclear.

Reference has been made, in section 3.10.3, to the Scannell and Gifford (2010) model of place attachment. This study, however, supports Stedman's assumption, that this place attachment applies to meanings, which is related to the environmental experience. This suggests that place attachment is cognitively defined through the meanings and qualities associated with them. Place identity can be identified through place attachment in which, *we attribute meaning to landscapes and in turn become attached to the meanings'* (Stedman, 2002a, p. 563). This study argues that both meanings and attachment are closely related concepts in defining place identity.

Several studies categorise attachment to place in terms of physical and social attachment (Hidalgo and Hernandez, 2001); and functional and emotional attachment (Ujang, 2012; Shamsuddin and Ujang, 2008). Physical attachment refers to attachment resulting from physical contact with a place, linked with the importance of spatial and architectural components of the place to an individual's life. Functional attachment refers to attachment as a result of daily contact for necessary purposes, which can be linked to the importance of the street in satisfying an individual's goals and economic and personal needs. Social attachment refers to attachment as a result of a social relationship or bonding to others in and about the street; this can be with friends, family, or other street users. Emotional attachment refers to bonding that generates significant

emotional responses, meanings, and sense of belonging expressed by the respondents.

In short, this study argues that place identity and place attachment are two different concepts, yet both are necessary and complementary to each other. It can be argued that there is no strong attachment to a place unless there is a distinctive identity that reflects the aspirations and culture of individuals who inhabit that place and vice versa. For instance, one may feel attached to a place for different reasons (friends, family roots, ethics, religion …etc.), but it may take more than that (i.e. attachment or linking) to merge the place as a part of one's self. In this study, apart from the cognitive and affective factors, place identity may reinforce place attachment through feelings, level of engagement and frequency of visits, as well as an emotional and social attachment. As yet, there is still much less agreement on how bonds between people and place should be defined and measured. In addition, there is a lack of consensus concerning the definition of place attachment and how it differs from the related concept of place identity.

As such, place has both physical and psychological characteristics, and for this study, the term place attachment is preferred, as it emphasises the emotional aspects in people's feelings towards a place.
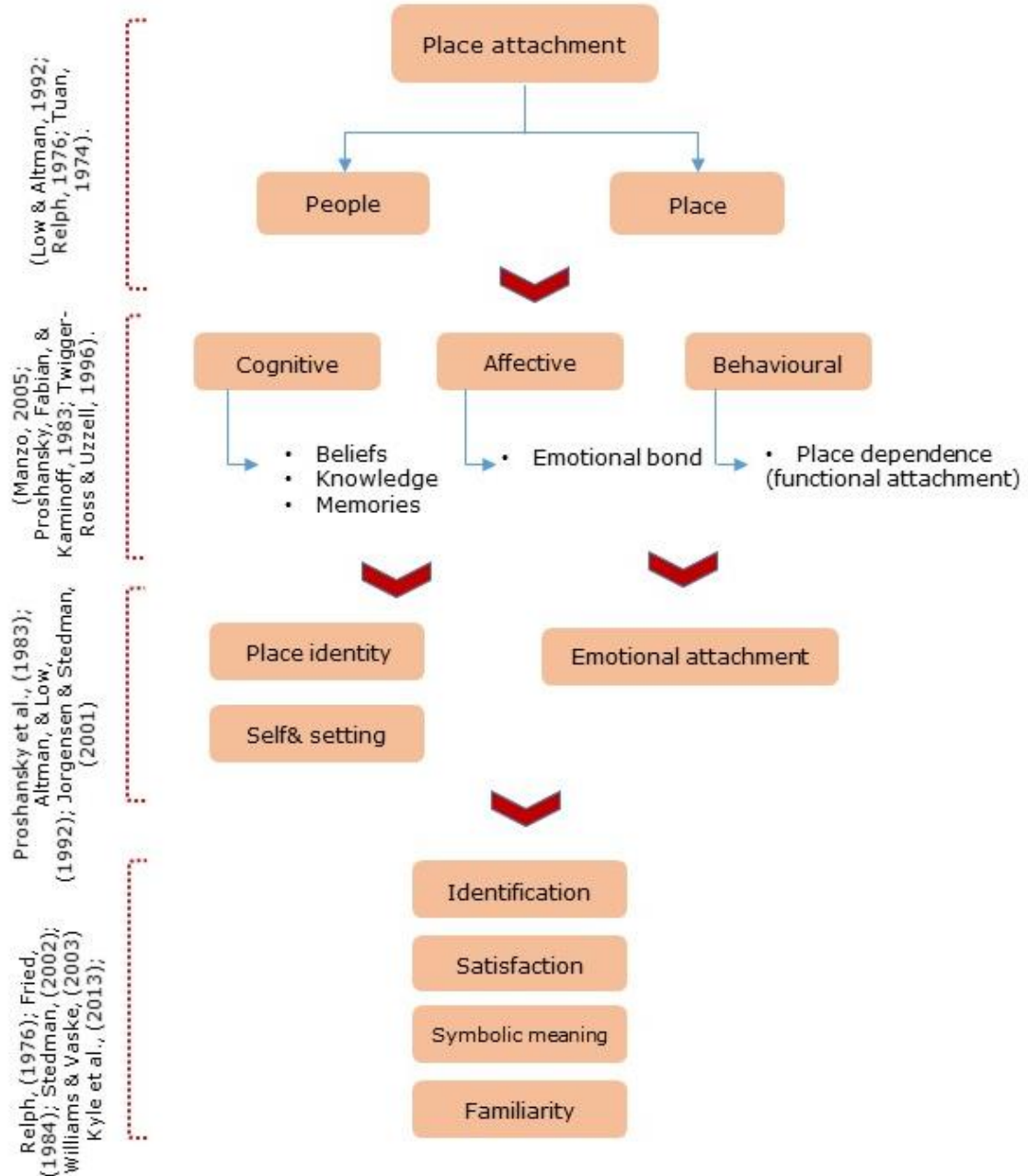
Figure 3.9: Summary of relevant definition to this study of place attachment as presented by several scholars.

3.7 Chapter Conclusion:

Creating successful places is an essential subject matter in urban design. The last five decades have witnessed a growing popularity regarding the quality of places that can lead to better places. For this study, both objective and subjective perspectives are utilised as a framework to examine the place identity in Misurata. This key subject, that would significantly contribute to this research, is to merge the attributes of the physical environment and the psychological factor of place meaning and attachment together in order to gain a better understanding of place identity.

It has been widely agreed that identity of place includes the attributes of the perceptual environment, meanings and the psychological factor in terms of attachment to place. Although this chapter attempts to break these components down into various parts, it must be remembered that place identity is a result of the interrelation and overlapping of all of these various parts. Moreover, it appears from the literature review that this interrelationship is very complex and that many scholars have not attempted to establish how each part of the component influences each other in order for place identity to be manifested. For instance, although the attributes of the physical environment are more tangible and therefore much is written on how important they are in influencing identity, they are also easier to understand because of their visibility. However, it is evident from the writings of others that the physiological component plays an important role in determining whether these two components are noticed and remembered as having a significant role in associating a place with a certain identity or not. Though much has been transformed with regards to the physical environment, meanings and place attachment in the place making process, the effects of these three components on place identity have not been concurrently brought to attention.

It is evident that identity and image are strongly related to the creation of place identity. It is evident that the image of the urban environment is evoked through involvement and not just by looking at the city. It is a mental construct

made up of sets of visual associations, which are then supplemented by known facts about the environment. The individual selects the data available to them, and in the process, they define their own environment.

It is apparent from the literature review that place identity is concerned with the distinctiveness of a place as perceived by the people. This means that identity is a quality that makes a place recognisable and as distinct from other places. Thus, this suggests that identity is a quality that enables the physical environment to be noticed and remembered by the people. The reason why the environment is noticed could be due to the physical qualities or the social meanings evoked by the physical structures.

This study considers a place as a complex concept, constructed from the way in which people attach meanings to it and from its physical setting as perceived by them (see also Smaldone et al., 2005). Thus, this thesis is concerned with place identity as relatively enduring people-environment conditions, perceptions, meanings and attachments, and importantly these are seen as components in a dynamic relationship. As stated in Chapter One, this study aims to introduce the attachment to place as a psychological factor in the framework of place identity. It aims to combine the psychological approach of cognition and emotions with the physical setting in order to gain a better understanding of place identity (see Figure 3.9). The next chapter will present the research methodology as well as elaborating on the methods utilised in gathering the data for this research.

- Distinctiveness
  - o Buildings
  - o Streets
  - o Nodes
- Image
- Legibility
- Walkability

- Events
- Historical Knowledge
- Memory
- Nostalgic
- Culture & Religion

Identity — Perception Meaning

Attachment

- Social Attachment
  - o Proud
  - o Belonging
  - o Family and community
- Emotional
  - o Love
  - o Stratification
  - o memory
- Functional
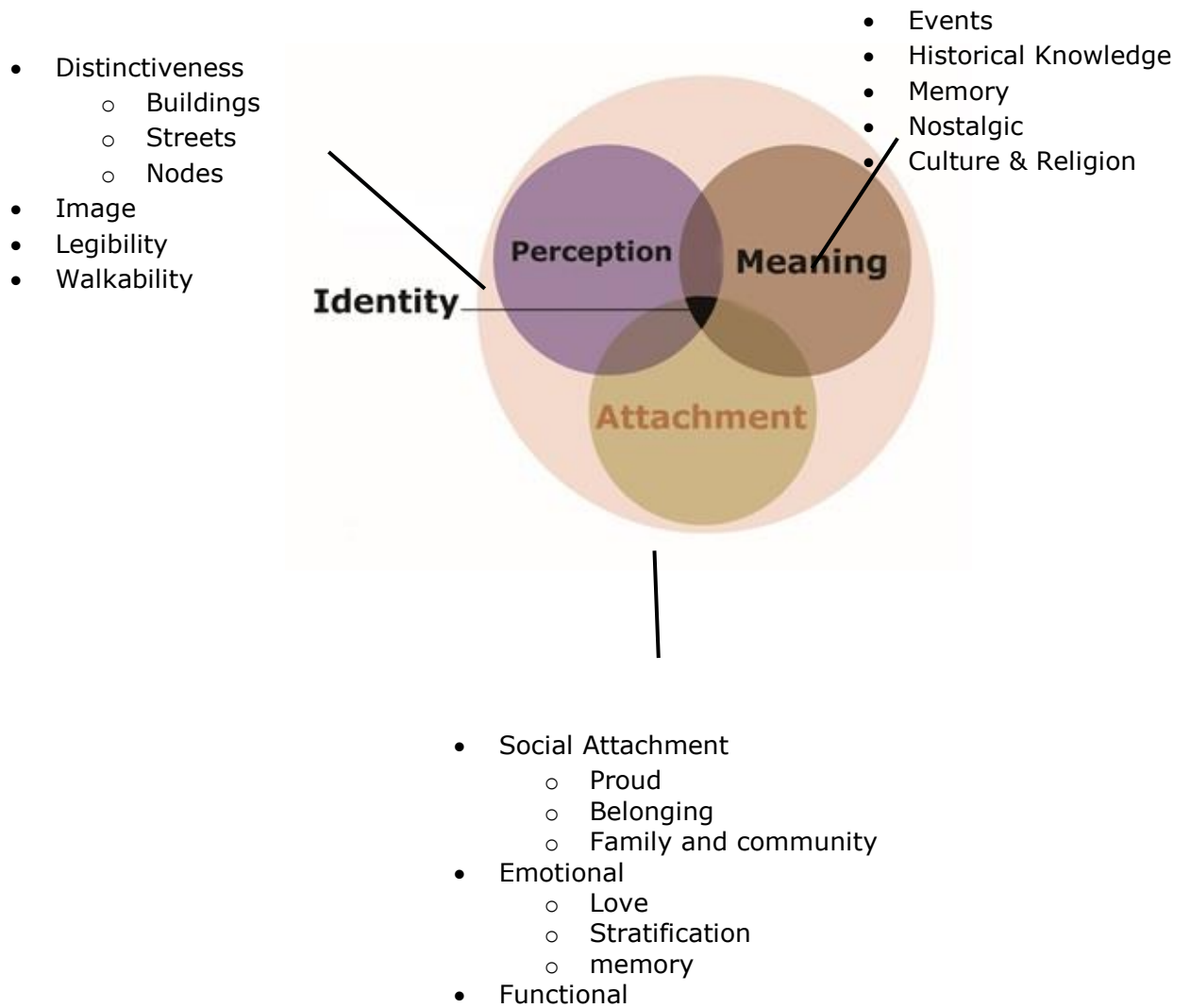
Figure 3.10: The conceptual framework of the study. Source: The author, (2014).

4   CHAPTER FOUR: RESEARCH METHODOLOGY

4.1   Introduction

This chapter presents the methodology adopted in this research and it is organised around two chief factors. The first factor is the research questions and the methodologies needed to answer these questions. The second is a critical review of previous research methodologies in order to determine the best approaches and methods to successfully conduct this research (Bryman, 2015). Thus, the selection of appropriate methodology, in this study, was undertaken by reviewing methodologies and techniques that have been employed by scholars in similar studies.

The chapter has been organised around three elements of inquiry as shown in Figure 4.1. It begins by highlighting an overview of the realist philosophical paradigm, which attempts to accommodate the two-knowledge claims of ontology and epistemology. It will then go on to addressing the strategies adopted in this study, followed by the discussion of the choice of the methodology. The data collection procedure will be then highlighted in section 4.10. It also explains the reasons why particular techniques were selected for the study. This followed by the research procedure and the steps of the data process and analysis. The final section addresses the limitations of the methodology and the conclusion.

Elements of Inquiry

Alternative Knowledge Claims
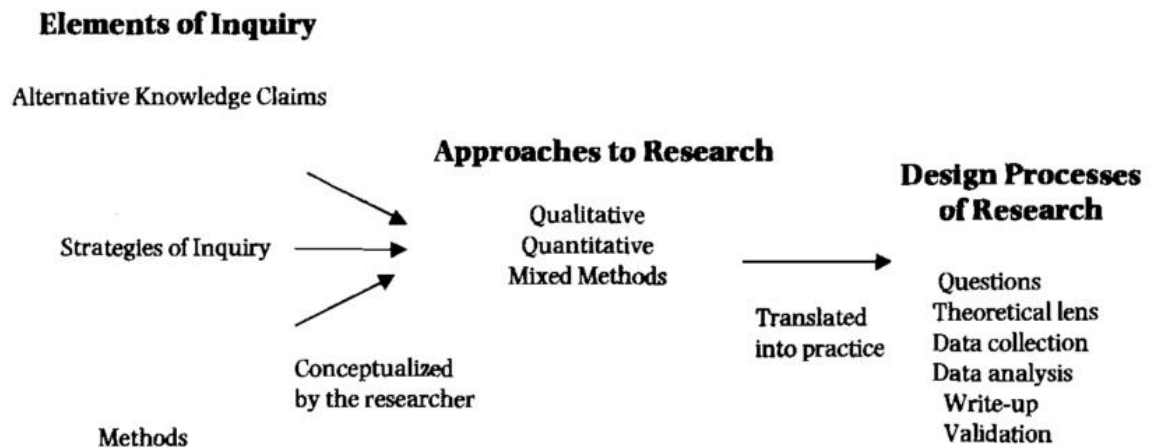
Figure 4.1: The three elements of inquiry-knowledge claims, strategies, and methods-combine to form different approaches to research (Creswell, 2013, p. 5).

4.2 Philosophy of Research

4.2.1 Paradigms and Knowledge

Scholarly, research or inquiry is about collecting and examining data of a certain phenomenon systemically in order to establish a new theory or to test an existing theory (Ponterotto, 2005). However, researchers often need to start their inquiry with a specific paradigm in order to outline the nature of reality that forms certain statements of a particulars knowledge, which is also known as 'knowledge claims' (Creswell, 2007). Maxwell (2008, p. 224) points out that some advantages of identifying the paradigms for research design '*…helps guide design decisions and to justify these decisions and allows building a coherent and well-developed approach to research'*. Thus, this section illuminates the rationale upon these research paradigms, which underlies epistemological considerations, towards establishing a research design and strategy, before embarking on a discussion of relevant research methodologies.

Indeed, paradigms embodied by different ideas about reality and how the knowledge can be gained from it, referred to as ontology, describing 'the nature of knowledge'; and epistemology, emphasising the questions of what we know

and how we become to know (Creswell, 2013, p. 25; Trochim and Donnelly, 2001). The major aspects of each position are presented in Figure 4.2. Nevertheless, both philosophies are closely related, in which ontology involves the philosophy of knowing the truth, epistemology discusses how to get to know this truth or knowledge. Following discussion tends to illustrate briefly the philosophical concepts of both thoughts, in order to establish research design and affects the relationship between the methodology application and theory of knowledge.
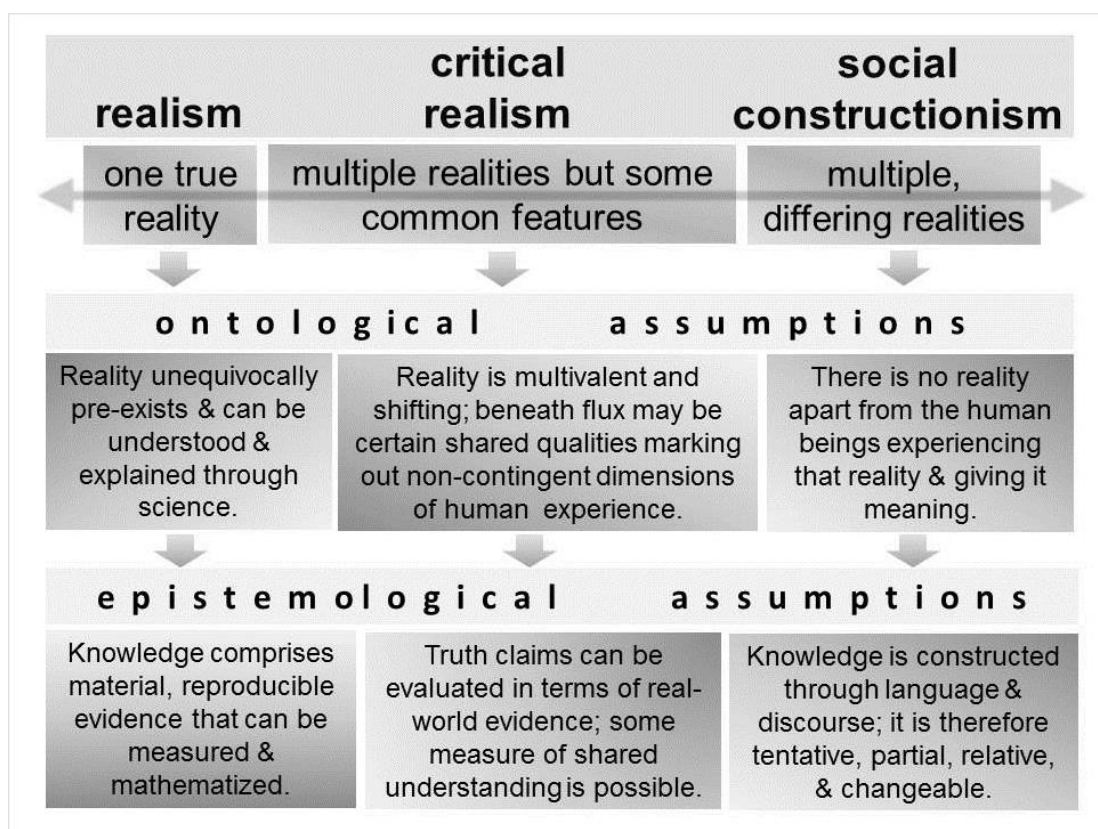
Figure 4.2: Some key ontological and epistemological assumptions of realism, critical realism, and social constructionism (Seamon and Gill, 2014, p. 4).

The philosophy of epistemology tends more to take into account the human's experience and thought to attain the knowledge. It places emphasis on understanding the world where we live and work based in our experience and thoughts, and thus, the reality is 'multiple' based on several factors such as time, context, culture and so on (Creswell, 2007). This means that there is no single

reality for the fact. Whereas, ontology assumes that knowledge can be gained purely from experimental research. According to this assumption, the nature of the knowledge has a single reality and is experimentally testable (Ponterotto, 2005; Creswell, 2007). Both assumptions are conceptualised and underpin the qualitative vs. quantitative debate by three major approaches namely 'positivism', 'interpretivism' and 'critical realism'.

The positivism approach agrees with empiricism that truths should be derived from experienced facts, so it affirms the importance of empirical research to obtain knowledge. Bryman (2015) argues that positivism links theory and research, with both, are applying inductive and deductive strategies. The emphasis is to test a theory and to generate a theory from the material. Another term that gives epistemology theory a distinction with positivism is interpretivism. Interpretivism facilitates the understanding of why or how certain phenomena exist, with positivism being often weak at understanding the social process. For example, more akin to environmental and place concerns, Blake (1970) criticised the positivism position due to the ignorance of the fact that a person's experience has the potential to understand the reality of phenomena of place. Nevertheless, although, interpretivism is good in social science, data analysis is challenging and often complex.

Interpretivism describes the reality as purely perceived through the human conceptualisation, and there is no separation between knowledge and values (Creswell, 2003). This means that there are multiple interpretations that elucidate the reality, i.e. there is no absolute single reality rather there are many meanings formulated by an individual's cognition. According to this theory, thus, the reality is varied based on the knowledge of people, context and time (Bryman, 2015). Thus, it is a multifaceted and may involve incongruities and inconsistency. This approach has also been applied largely in urban environment research, such as the potential of individual's knowledge about their world in explanation the phenomenon of place (Relph, 1976; Tuan, 1977), on place

attachment (Lewicka, 2011), genius loci (Norberg-Schulz, 1976) and place identity (Proshansky, 1978).

In contrast, critical realism represents the commonest view between theory and social research, whereby the researcher draws the possibility of measuring and understanding the reality through evidence that can be evaluated. Meaning that the reality can be obtained only through using suitable methods, yet it is independent of social conditioning involved in the knowledge derivation process (Krauss, 2005). In this case, it affirms the importance of chosen words that express the meaning of the reality should be driven from the seeking of the knowledge rather than based on *'…only a potentially truthful reflection of the reality'* (Seamon and Gill, 2014, p. 4). In a general sense, the essence of this assumption lies on the fact of that *'… we will only be able to understand- and so change- the social world if we identify the structure at work that generate those events and discourses'* (Bryman, 2015, p. 25). Thus, we can argue that critical realism is based on both empirical inquiry and social process or condition on the way to attain the knowledge.

Accordingly, this study is about how individuals experienced the quality of the place identity of their city. The meanings and understanding they would develop to express their feelings, senses, and attitude towards their environment. It aims to answer theoretical questions about environmental experience including images, meaning and attachment. Therefore, in this study, following Patterson and Williams (2005) theory of maintaining research traditions on a place, the epistemology position is, though, fluid and reflexive theory, in which apply also to the interpretation of the data held by the investigator. Considering this assumption has already determined the basic strategy of this study: a qualitative inquiry in nature but quantitative methodology included. Next section will discuss research strategy and design.

4.2.2 Strategies of Research: Deductive and Inductive

There are two main strategies suggested by literature discussed here in order to establish the nature of the relationship between research and theory: deductive and inductive. Generally, in deductive strategy, the researcher often begins with a basic theory or a specific model (the theory first) and ends with empirical facts, which is meant the process of gathering data is driven after theory or hypothesis was deduced (Miles and Huberman, 2014; Blaikie, 2000; Bryman, 2015). It is important to bear in mind, in this strategy, that, the validation of theory should be considered and tested before the use. In this respect, De Vaus (2002) identifies six stages for the deductive model as shown in figure 4.3. Deductive is often associated with quantitative research, in which subject to empirical inquiry.

One of the characteristics of deductive strategy its process appears very logically steps follow each other in a clear linear sequence. However, this is not always the case, during the course of the study; it often does not clearly track the order plan. This is due to that, after the data collected and analysed, the researcher may change their mind or understanding about the theory or perhaps new ideas and concepts start generated. This can be happening also in inductive strategy.

In opposition, inductive is usually portrayed as it is deductive, which is the theory deduced from the data as the outcome of research. Its essence generally lies with '*…Generating results and theories that are understandable and experientially credible, both to the people being studied and to others'* (Bolster, 1983 cited from Maxwell, 2008, p. 222). Meanings that, the data collected from the case study is the first step, then identifying patterns and themes through analysing the data towards border generalisation and ultimately making a tentative theory. This strategy is typically used in qualitative research, for example, Merriam (2002) stressed that the inductive is one of the important characteristics of the qualitative research in order to build a theory. However, as nature of the inductive as related with qualitative study usually has not a clear

and simple path. It may involve a weaving back and forth between data and theory, or researcher may need to collect further data in order to establish a clear stance between data and theory (Bryman, 2012). In this respect, inductive strategy, in most case, stands between generating a theory and use theory often used as a background in qualitative research. In this case, it appears in somehow ultimately linked to the deductive approach.

Accordingly, Bryman (2012) suggests that the best way in establishing a relationship between theory and research is linking both inductive and deductive strategies rather than, as he asserted, use '*… separated by a hard-and-fast distinction'*. The general point to be clarified here is that researcher should be more flexible in using both models in building a relationship between theory and research. Likewise, Miles and Huberman (2014) argues that although both strategies entirely seem different, in which one up to down as and other down to up, both of them at the end meet at the same place (see Figure 4.3). Thus, although, this study is qualitative in its nature with more akin to the inductive strategy, the strategy adopted will be a hybrid between inductive and deductive (where it will be necessary and appropriate) for analysing the data to construct a theory.
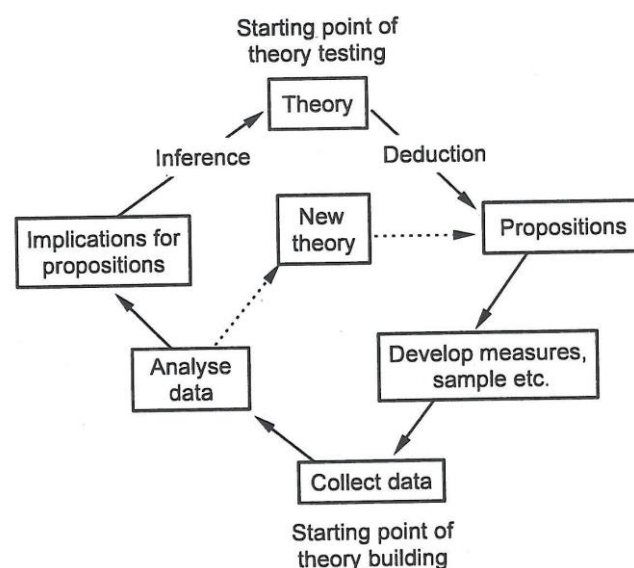
Figure 4.3: The research strategies, inductive and deductive approaches (De Vaus, 2002, p. 16).

4.2.3 The Grounded Theory

Grounded theory was introduced by sociologists Glaser and Strauss (2009, p. 3) as a method of '*…systematic discovery of the theory from the data of social research'*. Fundamentally, their argument was against the deductive reasoning, which is instead of refining theory by forcing data to fit existing one, they suggest a grounded theory as a rational way to develop new theory through own analyses of specific data.

Indeed, it evident that grounded theory and inductive strategy are associated, in which both are about generating a theory from the data. However, the inductive strategy often comes out with interesting results rather than producing a significant or clear theory (Bryman, 2012). In the other way, for example, Kane and O'Reilly-de Brún (2001) notice that the most obvious reason of adopting the inductive strategy, it uses a grounded theory approach. The following explanations summarise reasons of using ground theory in this study:

1. To develop a theory or modify an existing theory (Creswell, 2007).
2. To fill a gap in concepts relating to a certain phenomenon that has not yet acknowledged.
3. To clarify the relationships between concepts that are not yet fully understood or not yet rationally developed.
4. The research questions that have articulate to understand a certain phenomenon for a particular case may understand dissimilar way for another context, so there is a need to discover unachievable factors in that area.

In this study, as the literature review suggests, there are two reasons that it was decided to adopt the grounded theory approach:

Firstly, there is still an amount of gaps needed to fill for modifying recent theories and for developing new theories on the processes of place identity in relation to other concepts. Moreover, furthering the understanding of how perceptual variables such as perception, meaning and place attachment can contribute to the place identity have not yet been articulated. It assumed that discusses in Chapter Two, using this framework could provide a further understanding of the notion of place identity.

Secondly, most published work on place and place identity have focused on Western countries, while other countries such as those in North Africa, particularly Libya, have not yet been adequately discussed. Otherwise, findings in such a context may add something new to the knowledge. Moreover, the undertaking of this research is to understand how perceptual variables such as place attachment and meanings contribute to the place identity within the Libyan context. According to the grounded theory, its strength lies in its ability to focus on the specific issues of reality rather than hypothesis testing. Thus, the possibility of establishing a theory can be achieved using this approach within the chosen case study *'using multiple sources of evidence'* (Robson and McCartan, 2016, p. 150). The overall aim is to examine how residents of Misurata experience the features and qualities of the built environment that are associated with place identity with aim of developing new theoretical insight grounded in the data of the context.

4.2.4 The Case Study

This research study used a case study approach as it studies *'a particular contemporary phenomenon within its real life context using multiple sources of evidence'* (Robson, 1993, p. 146). In this research, the case study used as a strategy to explore the concept of place identity within the Libyan context and it seeks to investigate 'how' person-place relationship can integrate to form the phenomenon of place.

According to Yin (2009), there are four reasons for choosing a case study as method approach. Firstly, is to clarify the causal relationships in complex interventions and the reality of life. Secondly, is to understand the context of real life in light of intervention has taken place. Thirdly, is to describe or identify the intervention itself. Fourthly, is to find out the conditions of the intervention being evaluated with a vague set of outcomes. He suggests four stages for the case study as a methodology: beginning with the design the case study, followed

by conducting the case study, then analysing the case study data and finally developing a conclusion, recommendations and implications (ibid).

A case study can be either a single study or a multi-cases or multi-site within a case study and they should be considerably chosen based on the research problem (Yin, 2009). It is commonly used in 'why' and 'how' questions and can be descriptive, exploratory or explanatory (Yin, 2009). A single case study strategy was used as a strategy to reveal the phenomena within real-life contexts. A single case study has distinct advantages and disadvantages in comparison to multiple cases studies research. Indeed, one of the key features of the case study is its incorporation of multiple sources of evidence. Observations, data archives, oral history, inventories of artefacts, and interviews; are amongst the sources of evidence to be analysed (Groat and Wang, 2013).
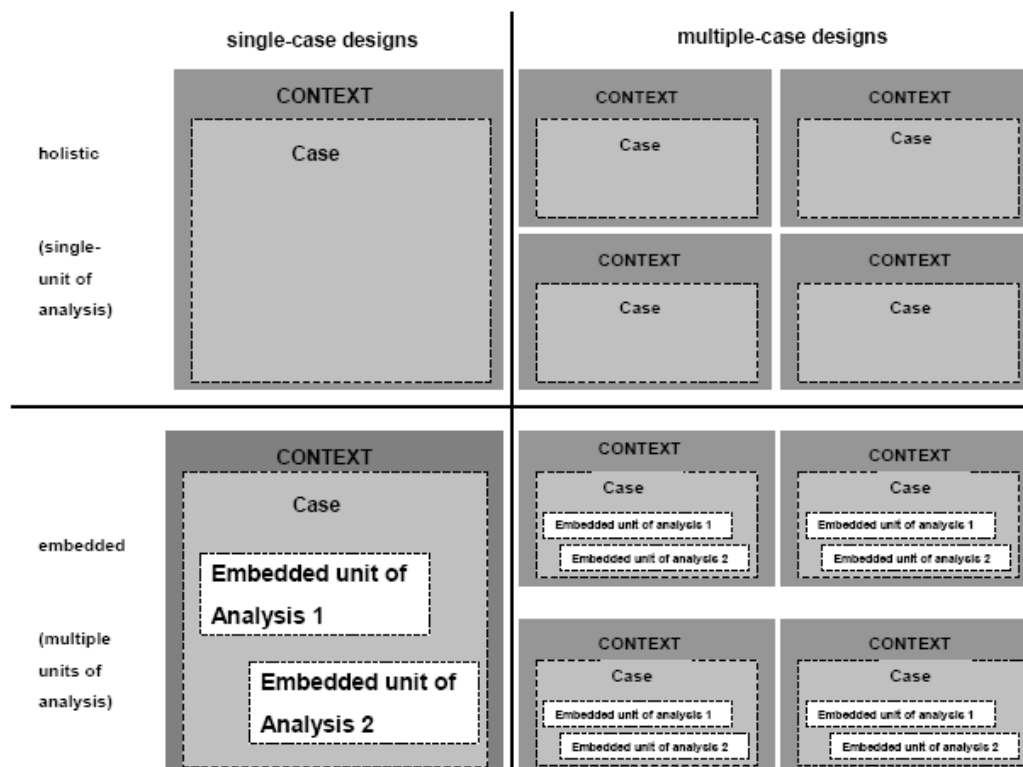
Figure 4.4: Basic types of designs for case studies. (Yin, 2009, p. 46).

4.3 The Choice of Methodologies

In making decisions regarding which approach would be most appropriate for this research, it is useful to distinguish between the types of methodologies. From a literature review, two types of methodologies have frequently been employed in people-environment research. They are qualitative and quantitative methods.

Table **4.1** simplifies the distinction between quantitative and qualitative methods (Punch, 2005; Merriam, 2002; Creswell et al., 2003).

Table 4.1: Difference between qualitative and quantitative methods.

Qualitative methods	Quantitative methods
Observe and interpret	Measure and test
More subjective	More objective
Less generalisable	More generalisable
Applied for small samples	Applied for large samples
Data are collected by participant, observation and interviews	Data are collected by empirical study
Assumes a dynamic and negotiated reality	Assumes a fixed and measurable reality
Data presents in the language of the informant.	Data are presented through statistical analyses
Statistical analysis	Text and image analysis
Statistical interpretation	Themes, patterns interoperation

Source: (Creswell et al., 2003, p. 21).

As it has been discussed in chapter two, the concept of place and its related concepts (e.g. place identity. Meanings and place attachment) have been often explored by different disciplines drawing on a phenomenology, which assumes the knowledge through human experience (see also Fishwick and Vining, 1992) and have '*received very little attention in spatial planning research*' (Puren et al., 2008, p. 134). The key point of this philosophical tradition is to say that the world cannot really experience unless they used and enjoyed by people in everyday lived experience (consciously and unconsciously).

Therefore, place identity has largely been studied in relation to the cognitive knowledge of that formulated by the persons, which in turn determines the essence of the place and its identity. Normally, such a study is qualitative in their nature. Furthermore, to answer questions concerning feeling and meanings of places to individuals it turns to qualitative approach and analysis of person-place relationship or environmental experience as stressed by Fishwick and Vining (1992). As such, this led to the use of methods including interviews, site observation and other techniques to highlight subjective meanings and intuitive knowledge of place experiences (ibid). Indeed, as human geography believes, place identity is highly qualitative research in their nature although quantitative approach has become increasingly used. Following paragraphs shows some examples of using qualitative methods in place identity research.

The early work on imageability carried out by Lynch (1960), who invented the mental mapping technique as a primarily qualitative method and later on inspired many other works in the urban design field (e.g. Downs and Stea, 1973; Kaplan, 1973). Other examples are the studies of (Worskett, 1969) and Cullen (1961), who were more focused on qualitative methods, using photographs for analysing townscape character. A more recent work using a qualitative approach to reveal a town's character as perceived by its citizens was undertaken by Green (2010). He employed face-to-face open-ended interviews and a photographic survey, in which participants were requested to identify the most salient features of the environment that determine the town's character. Entirely conducted data were qualitatively analysed. These techniques, however, are often undertaken in combination with other data techniques in order to explore a phenomenon in depth.

In Manzo (2005) example, the 40 participants were interviewed face-to-face, and the interviews were recorded and transcribed in order to identify the major categories that determine the emotional ties to place. Likewise, the studies of (Speller et al., 2002) and Chow and Healey (2008) both have used interviews in order to explore how a resident's attachments are influenced after the

relocation from an old settlement to a newer one and from home to the university, respectively. Although both obtained interesting results, Speller (2000b) observed some weaknesses of using interviews in a longitudinal study, where participants may not adequately understand the questions in similar way.

In general, from phenomenology position, the qualitative methodology has a growing acceptance as convinced most reliable approach to people-environment relationships, particularly in human geography, social and environmental psychology. However, there is increased criticism of using one approach in measuring place identity. According to anthropologists, this approach, i.e. qualitative, has a limitation in addressing our understanding the world. They argue that phenomenology cannot provide a cohesive knowledge about the complexity of daily lived experience by just focusing on assumption of people would deal consciously and unconsciously with experience place (Hay, 1998). Thus, they have suggested the quantitative method as a best way to control the simple size, managing carefully of using variables in comparing between concepts. This criticism has mentioned by several scholars in in urban design, as discussed in the following section, as they argued a large amount of published research in place identity have focused on one method which is qualitative in measuring place identity and have ignored the other i.e. quantitative.

For example, in parallel Shamai (1991) and Lalli (1992) criticise the lack of proper measurement tools in terms of an inadequacy of empirical researches on place identity. Moreover, from Relph's (1976) theory of sensing a place through seven ways: in order to test the identity, Shamai (1991) educed four categories ranging variability in the intensity of people's feeling residing in a specific place at a particular time. His research results emphasised upon the variables such as feeling, attachment, belonging and commitment that influenced the sense of place. While, in more emphasis on empirical work, Lalli (1992) developed five rating scale for urban identity: evaluation, familiarity, attachment, continuity and commitment. She tests statistically the correlation and reliabilities occurred

between these variables in order to measure the 'urban identity'. In most cases of this approach, they often use a large samples size for their investigation (three hundred respondents in stance) and the samples were selected using a random sample. In both examples, variables were tested in order to identify the relationship between them and how they influence the place identity.

Since that, there two methodologies can be used towards understanding and examining kind of research problem related to the place identity and its associations. It is not surprising that many authors, for example (Uzzell and Romice, 2008) argue that until now, there were no identified holistic criteria for measuring the place identity.

Recently, however, both methodologies widely combined in the exploration of people's environmental experiences. For example, Scannell and Gifford (2010) suggest that investigations on people-place relationships can be qualitative or quantitative instruments such as semi-structure interviews that categories based on the three dimensions of framework and could analysed quantitatively in terms of comparing and justifying between these items. Consequently, this research, despite having a predominantly qualitative approach, a mixed method in measuring place identity was adopted. The qualitative methods were used to examine people's perception of their place. This is based on the inductive and grounded theory as discussed formerly. Whereas the questionnaire was used to test how the variables of perception, meanings and attachment were attributed in the creation of place identity (see chapter seven).

4.4 Methodology Adopted in the Research: Mixed Methods

Having analysed these two different methodologies, we can observe that both are applicable in this study. However, the main objective is to obtain a better knowledge of significant variables rather than the final testing of a well-formulated theory. Therefore, as already discussed in the previous section, although the main emphasis in this study is in the qualitative approach, the following explanations justify the applicability of mixed methods in this research:

i. The first is to allow for triangulation of the data for strengthening the outcomes of the research. According to Morse (1991), the triangulation of methods is important to strengthen validity issues. In order to provide qualitative data for triangulation of methods, it was decided in the questionnaire design to include several scales and variables, including one for perception, meaning and place attachment.

ii. The second is to increase the data validation. It has been though for this study the appropriate choice of methodologies that can assist in validity is the adoption of the mixed methods strategy. According to Creswell and Clark (2011) that a mixed methods approach can reduce the weaknesses of one method used for the research, provide more evidence for the research, more sufficient answers for the research questions. Similarly, combined methods help to validate and interpret the findings in broader and appropriate way (Johnson and Onwuegbuzie, 2004).

iii. To increase the generalisability: interview method is often criticised for lacking generalisability, which is dependent on the researcher's interpretation. Thus, using a quantitative method with larger number of sample size can increase the generalisability.

4.4.1 Strategy for Mixed Methods Data Analysis

As explained earlier, this study is based on a grounded theory approach which must be qualitatively analysed and primary data collected from the interview, therefore it must be noted that the strategy used for analysing the mixed methods findings is based on a sequential procedures as suggested by (Creswell, 2013, p. 13). Figure 4.5 elaborates that the possibility to begin from the qualitative method for exploratory purposes or from the quantitative method with a larger sample to gain some generalisability, which both are applicable in this study. However, the major themes and categories of the findings were

grounded from the coding of the interview transcription and quantitative data and among other qualitative data such as observation and sketch mapping were emerged under appropriate categories for triangulation purposes. Nevertheless, the concurrent procedure also was used during fieldwork, in which both methods used for the data collection. This will be discussed fully in the data procedures section.
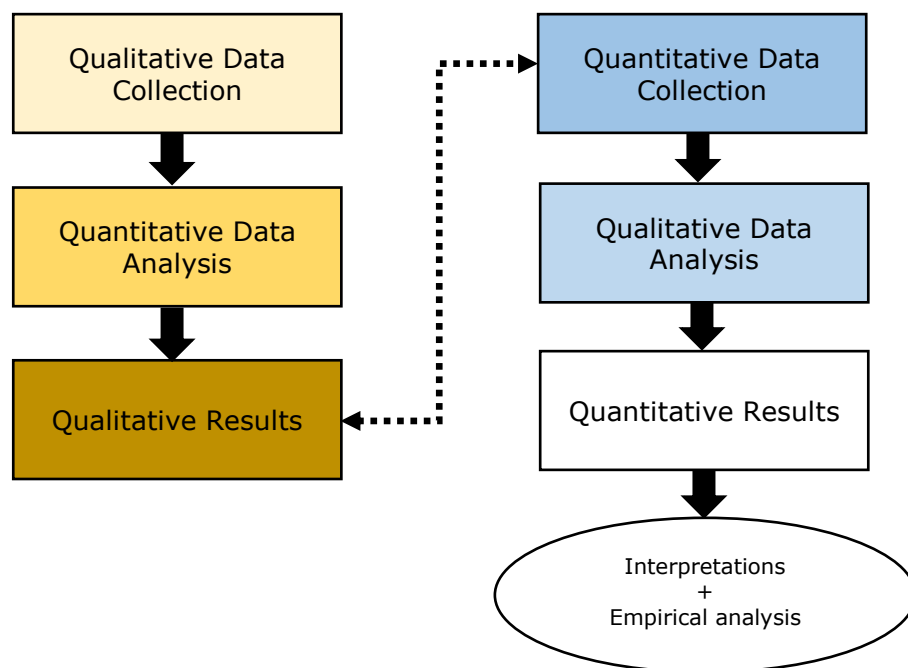
Figure 4.5: Explanatory sequential designs of mixed methods. Source (Creswell, 2013).

4.5 Methods for Data Gathering

This section explores various aspects of the framework and techniques that have been used for data collection and how each method was applied in the case study. This section highlights the theoretical background of the choice of the instruments. Generally, the techniques selected for the qualitative methodology were face-to-face interviews, mental maps, and observation, while the questionnaire was selected as the main source of the quantitative data.

4.5.1 The Interview

One of the common qualitative methods has been largely used in exploratory and descriptive research, particularly that used a case study, is the interview (Yin, 2009; Mendoza and Morén-Alegret, 2013). Simply, it is a verbal conversation between researcher and participants, the key point is to allow people express their though, feelings, experience, sense, and most importantly, to understand their 'insights' about a certain topic or phenomenon (Rubin and Rubin, 2012; Seidman, 2012). The information obtained from the interview can help interpret certain contextual phenomena or socio-spatial experience (Ragin, 1994 from Mendoza). In brief, the major purpose is to elicit from participants their '*…cognitive domains of features attributes of the built environment that is perceived as being important to the assessment of place quality'* (Fenton and Reser, 1986, p. 114).

However, one problematic of interview technique that usually is argued by positivist position is that the bias in questions and answers may inclusion during the conversation engagement between researcher and participants. However, in such a research is not logical to be biased for a very simple reason, which is the aim of the researcher basically is not to achieve 'objective' knowledge rather than want to understand the existing phenomenon in the context (Mendoza and Morén-Alegret, 2013). One must consider enhancing the efficacy of the interview and decrease the bias in questioning, the researcher should allow people to talk openly without interrupted them or guided them by a researcher to another interesting point before the complete their idea.

According to Marshall and Rossman (2010), there are three types of interview: conversational interview; scheduled or semi-structured interview; and the 'co-constructed interview'. The informal conversation is conducted in unplanned and accidental ways with individual or small groups. The guided interview is scheduled and the list of questions is structured and prepared. The interview schedule is mostly focused on specific questions and structures. Finally, the co-constructed interview involves both scheduled and informal conservations

in which the researchers and respondents can 'generate new meaning together' (ibid).

In this study, a semi-structured interview with open-ended questions was chosen in this study to gain a description of the respondents' experience such as feelings, describing elements that they found easy to remember, and reasons for distinctiveness, and how and why certain features have meanings for them, and why they feel attached to the place. This approach allows the researcher to guide the interview within the scope the study in efficient time management as well as provides flexibility for other issues that arose from the conservation to be explored (Smaldone et al., 2005; Bernard and Bernard, 2012). This type of interview as being flexible and naturally expressed, yet the conversation can be guided with that relevant to the research area.

Literature review shows that there is a wide range of using the semi-structured interview in qualitative research relating to place concerns. For example, Relph (1976) argues that people's experience with a place can merely be obtained through in-depth interview and 'probing', a major method of qualitative research. It is also a useful method to measure perception through undertaken in combination with other methods such as sketch mapping and observation (Uzzell and Romice, 2008), which provides more fully understanding reasons for the analysis cognitive maps. Lynch (1960, p. 144) in studying the imageability, used the mental mapping technique and he noted that '…*accurate predictions of the images derived from the verbal interview material'*. Thus, in this study, the interview is considered the primary source of information to be complemented with other data collection methods. The significance of interview method driven from its ability to reveal a number of common themes that develop our understanding of a certain phenomenon under the study such as place identity (Smaldone et al., 2005). Thus, the major purpose is the discover themes that help answer the research questions of this study.

4.5.2 The Questionnaire

The selected method for the quantitative approach was a questionnaire. The questionnaire is not just a statistical process, but also it helps to evaluate the of variable are linked and affected each other in the logical way (De Vaus, 2002). In line with Green (1999, p. 315), this study utilises questionnaire as '*one can statistically compare results between other methods and then helps to validate and interpret the results*'. Furthermore, Green (1999, p. 315) has demonstrated verbal rating scale as a useful method to '*identify constructs known to be associated with the community's town character experience*'. Hence, the inclusion of questionnaire survey is to provide a triangulation of methods.

Literature has shown that questionnaire is a useful instrument and measurement thoughts, moods, attitudes and behaviour. For example, Williams et al. (1992) have used about 60 possible items questionnaire to measure place attachment and place identity. For instance statement such as 'I wouldn't substitute any other area for doing the type of things I did here' responded to functional attachment or desired activities that supported by a place, and 'this place means a lot to me' on a five-point strongly agree to strongly disagree rate to measure place identity (ibid). Although different studies use different applications of place attachment, it is generally agreed that attachment is strongly related to familiarity and the level of residence length.

Williams and Vaske (2003) on their work on place attachment measurement towards more concerning about validation and generalisability have constructed two forms of the questionnaire in order to evaluate the statistical differences in place dependence and place attachment variables. They suggest that emotional bond to place can be systematically measured in which '*people develop different levels and forms of attachment to different places*' (p. 838). They also concluded that future studies should consider the socio-demographic variables in scaling place attachment and how they would correlate with each other, which can be achieved by use of the questionnaire method. Similarly, Lalli (1992) found that there is an important relationship between the length of residence and identity,

which is empirically needed to be tested. Lewicka (2008) and Kyle et al. (2013) found that place attachment and place identity are related through identification process that represents place cognition. These studies generally suggest that the environmental evaluation could be a checklist.

Accordingly, a more subtle validity question is to what extend perception, attachment and meaning dimensions constitute the distinct form of place identity. Although place identity often tends to study qualitatively it can be assumed that a questionnaire would be a valid instrument for this study for following reasons:

1- To probe the general characterises of residents' perception to their city.
2- The data driven from questionnaire can assist to validate the other qualitative information.
3- Variation between socio-demographic characteristics in perceiving the quality of place.
4- Test variables of perception, meanings and attachment and how they associated to determine the place identity
5- To identify certain aspects of the research questions, where appropriate, such as the influence of socio-demography on perception, meaning and attachment to a place and how can influence the place identity.

4.5.3 Mental Mapping

One of the most relevant techniques that have been used in past research to measure an individual's awareness of a place is mental mapping practice, which has introduced by Lynch (1960). In this technique, respondents are requested to draw a map on a blank piece of paper and list the most noticeable features as conveyed by their impression of the studied area.

'*Mental or cognitive mapping is the product of a series of psychological processes that register, code, store, then call to mind and decode all information on our everyday spatial environment. In this sense, cognitive mapping is a cognitive characteristic to be found in our minds'* Nasar (2008, p. 361).
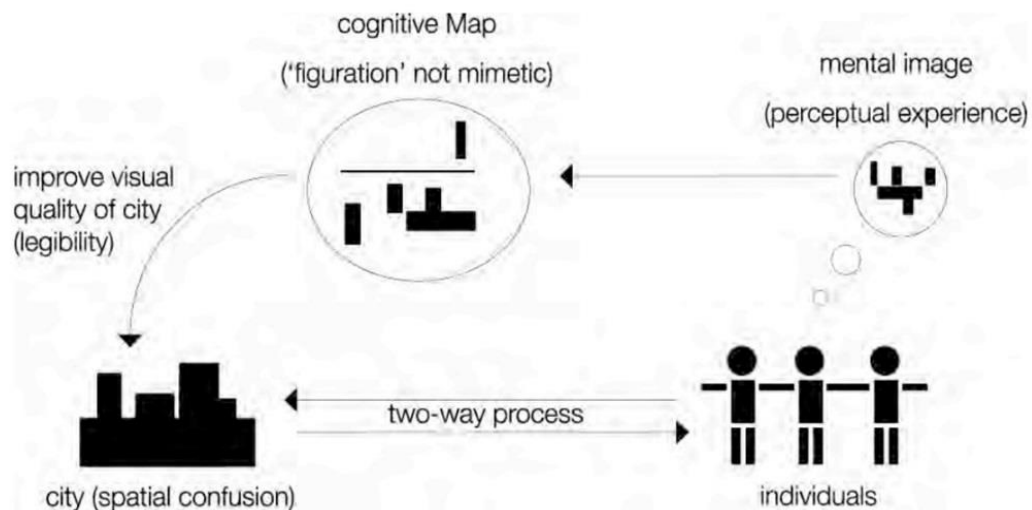
Figure 4.6: The prominent of the physical environment in the mental image as representing in a cognitive mapping's theory. Source: (Wallen, 2006, p. 12)

According to Sulsters (2005) cited from Tan and Ujang (2012, p. 55) mental mapping is '*the individual's selective representation of their known world'*. Akin to this, it has been pointed out several times that, the relationships between persons and their environment were undertaken as a perceptual process. Based on what Lynch (1960) suggests is that the mental mapping can provide a set of information. Lynch (1982) argues that asking respondents to recall the most significant features of a place graphically is an adequate tool to measure the identity. To date, mental mapping is still applied in individual's perception as the most relevant method to measure people's perception. On their recent study on the applicability of the mental mapping in Malaysian cities, Tan and Ujang (2012, p. 55) found that the mental mapping is '*a reliable technique to record evidence of people's cognition of the studded area'*.

However, there are some difficulties in the application and analysis of this method. For example, Golledge and Stimson (1997) noticed that there is a lack of information regarding sequences and elements types and interrelations as it was difficult to analyse component parts in of a city in detail, which cannot be 'reassembled' into a whole graphically. Another issue regarding using sketch map

was the ability to draw a clear sketch map by respondents. Golledge (1993) notices that may some people find that it is difficult for them to represent and configure their knowledge graphically and a result we have 'distortion' drawings. This was also realised by Lynch (1960, p. 145) himself when he noted that *'Perhaps the difficulties of drawing and of fitting everything together simultaneously make the sketch maps unduly fragmented and distorted'*.

Therefore, there was a need to give attention about using this instrument on perceptual and cognitive of the built environment. Thus, recently, in order to resolve the problems, Banai (1999) and Mendoza and Morén-Alegret (2013) suggest that an inductive method can be used instead of a deductive method, which allows synthesis and to compare the data from other methods. As a result, a combining of data from other sources with mental maps can provide a better understanding of the mechanisms of the urban environment and its effects on people's perceptions.

Therefore, this study follows this suggestion and strategy, in which the mental maps were used as a one of a wider group of instruments accompanied by other methods such as interviews, questionnaires and site observations. Mental maps were used in this study to provide information on the structure and pattern of the place i.e. in terms of the physical scene, while people's emotions and feelings were aggregated mostly by the in-depth interview. In addition, the data regarding the meaning and emotional bond to a place cannot be revealed by using only this instrument. Other issues were taken into consideration during the field study. To sum up, there are a few studies on the legibility of Libyan cities using mental mapping technique. Therefore, it is interesting to discover the applicability of the mental mapping technique in Libyan context by focusing on identifying users' perception of place identity.

4.5.4 The Observation

Activity or actions taking place are a major component of place identity as spaces become places when it is being used by people (Tuan, 1977). Therefore, observing the life of the urban places and describing people in that place, such as who they are and what they do can provide a useful source of informant about the determination of place identity. In this respect, Nasar (2008, p. 362) expressed that *'assessing perceptions of environmental attributes and affective appraisals of environments has relevance to understanding active living through the environment'*. This implies that perceiving qualities of places a vital role in responding to that place. Hence, studying people's activities can assist in understanding their cognition and relationship with a place.

The site observation also includes recording the physical qualities that made up the environment such as building condition, street scale, façade, and historical significance. This, according to Worskett (1969), can provide a general assessment of the place identity (case study) in a comprehensive and valid way.

In this study, observations were used to gather data about the type of activities occurred in the city centre of Misurata. It measures individuals' activities pattern, movement, spatial interrelations and constraints. According to Rapoport (1982b, pp. 13-14) *'…people react to environments in terms of the meanings the environments have for them* […] *the meaning aspects of the environment are critical and central, so the physical environment is used in the presentation of self, in establishing group identity'*. Akin to this, Gehl (2011, p. 11) identifies three types of activities in the public realm that are associated with the quality of the environment: necessary activities; optional activities; and resultant activities. He argues that the frequency of occurrence of optional activities increased when the quality of the physical environment is good, while a place with poor quality only strictly necessary activities occur. He describes good places that inspire people to stop, think, play, relax, gear, see, talk, walk, sit and enjoy. From this, we can assume that a good environment provides good options for activities and then stronger place attachment, and meanings.
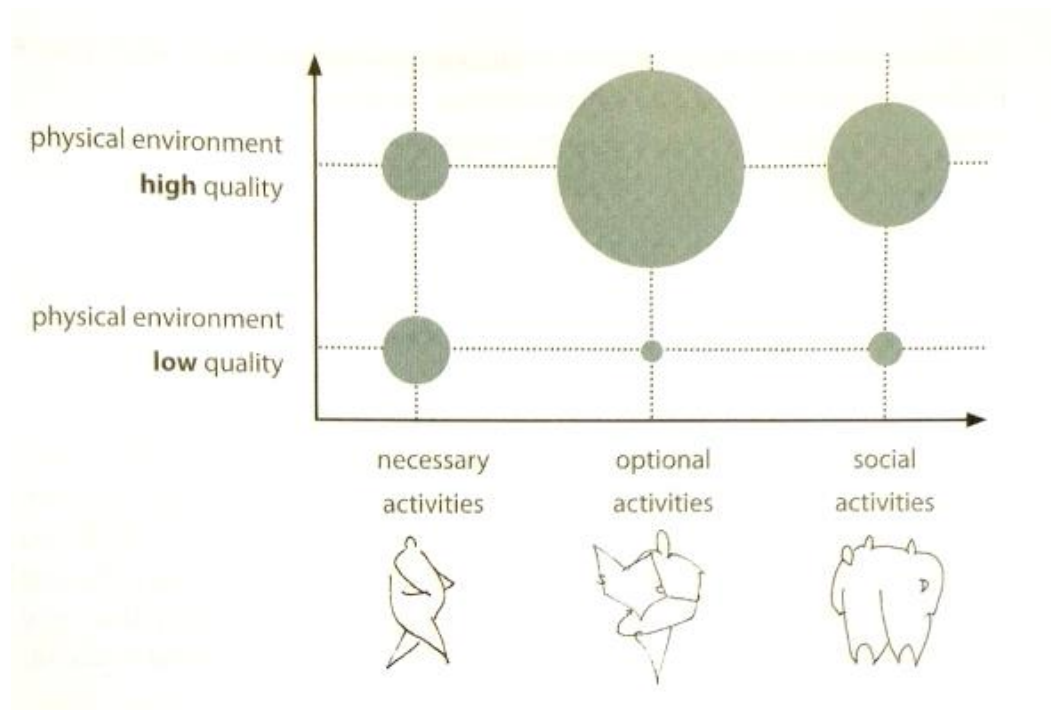
Figure 4.7. Types of outdoor activities (Gehl, 2011, P. 11).

According to Jorgensen and Stedman (2001, p. 238) '*direct observation can be inferred on the basis of measured responses*' toward the spatially determined object and place identity '*can be inferred from responses of a cognitive*'. However, people can recognise symbols of the place, but they do not have any sort of feeling about it. In this sense, place can be mentioned only as a location or address although there is 'awareness' of it (Shamai, 1991).

The information obtained from observation will be useful and helped to analyse findings from the survey and interview as well. Marshall and Rossman (2010) argue that observation plays a vital role with in-depth interviews enabling both 'tone of voice' and observing the actions 'become generative sources of insights'. Likewise, Lynch (1960) argues that the best way to measure attitude, affect, feeling and attachment is by asking people and then watching them. In short, this technique is concentrating on activity analysis and spatial relations as

a useful source, in this study, to obtain major social aspects and physical significance in the city centre of Misurata.

4.6 Data Collection Procedures

Having outlined the methodologies underlying this research, and the choice of both qualitative and quantitative methods, this section describes in more detail the data procedures of these methods. It intends to highlight intensely the various aspects of the procedures of the data.

4.6.1 Pilot Study

Initially, the pilot study was designed to test and then modify the proposed methods and to explore their implications. For example, to see how people can understand the questions formulated in the questionnaire and the interview schedule to avoid any ambiguity from any terminology. In addition, to estimate the amount of time required for the actual research. It also was found that it was a useful tool to demonstrate and strengthen the management of the study. For example, the pilot study assisted in determining an appropriate time and appropriate data that could be collected; to reveal possible gaps and unclearness in the questions; test the required time for each question, and most importantly, to check the reliability and quality of data being collected.

In the pilot study, 10 questionnaires were distributed and three interviews were conducted. The results of the pilot study showed that some questions in questionnaire form needed to be rephrased and some terminologies were needed to be clarified in order to avoid any ambiguity. It was also noticed that some questions were understood in a similar way to other questions; therefore, it was decided to remove them in order to avoid any repetition in answering questions.

It was noticed from the pilot study, the duration for the questionnaire to be completely answered by participants took between twenty to thirty minutes, which is a long-time. Thus, the decision was made to give the questionnaires to

the respondents to fill it in an appropriate time and asking them to return them to be collected three days later. This provides enough time for the participants to answer all parts of the questionnaire in an applicable manner.

4.6.2 Phase 1: Questionnaire

The questionnaire conducted in Misurata city during the time of the middle of July and end of October 2014. Unlike the interview, the questionnaire was designed to collect data from a larger sample size. Although the questionnaire was already prepared, the actual study was conducted after the pilot study. The residents of the Misurata city aged 18 and above were invited to participate in the study and the way in which the sample was achieved is described in the following section. This section also will present the stages of quantitative data procedures including the questionnaire design, pilot study, questionnaire implementation, and finally the statistical analysis.

4.6.2.1 The Sample

According to De Vaus, (1991), there are two broad types of samples which are the probability and nonprobability samples. 'Probability sampling' gives an equal chance of each unit of population to be selected as a sample while 'non-probability' does not give an equal chance to be the selected sample. Therefore, the probability samples are preferable because they are more likely to produce representative samples.

The sample size for the questionnaire was based on clustering sampling. Each cluster represents the population; for example, the residential quarters, shopping areas, public intuitions and public spaces. Within these clusters, the respondents were broadly divided into traders, walkers, visitors, shoppers, officers, students and so on. For cultural reasons, in order to approach female to be included the study, copies of surveys were delivered to their houses in order to be collected later on.

The decision on the total number of participants was according to the accuracy needed for the sample. Furthermore, because the number of the population does not have a strictly with sample accuracy as declared by De Vaus (2002) as well as the Misurata population is not significant, which is about 400,000 people. The sample size was based on the accuracy required for the sample as well as the extent of the variation that existed in the population selected (De Vaus, 1991).

Based on the principle that the size of the population sample from which the sample was drawn is irrelevant for the accuracy of the sample, the sample size drawn from this survey is generated based on the calculation by De Vaus (1991) (refer to Table 4.2). It is based on 7.5% sampling error at 95% confidence level and the smallest sub-group should have at least 50-100 cases (De Vaus, 1991). Thus, it was thought that 176 samples is sufficient and can ensure to include respondents from a different socio-demographic background.

Table 4.2: Sample size based on the population homogeneity and desired accuracy.

Sampling error (5%)	Sample size	Sampling error (5%)	Sample size
1.0	10000	5.5	330
1.5	4500	6.0	277
2.0	2500	6.5	237
2.5	1600	7.0	204
3.0	1100	7.5	178
3.5	816	8.0	156
4.0	625	8.5	138
4.5	494	9.0	123
5.0	400	9.5	110
		10.0	100

Notes: * at the 95% level of confidence
** Samples smaller than this would normally be too small to allow meaningful analysis (De Vaus, 2002, p. 82).

A study on the sense of place: an empirical research in Toronto by Shamai (1991) use 155 randomly selected respondents at three different levels of place (country, province, and metropolitan area). While another recent study on place

identity and place attachment by Bernardo and Palma-Oliveira (2014), using a three different scales (neighbourhood, city and country), involved 178 of two groups of residents (permanent and temporary), which indicated almost the same number of sample size. Based on the above cases, it is suggested that the researchers have used a similar formula in determining the sampling size. This represents approximately spectrum adult's residents of the city that covered a range of favourably with demographic characteristics.

4.6.2.2 Socio-Demographic Characteristics

It has pointed out several times that the socio-demographic has a significant influence on studies concerning people' feelings, perception and attachment to a place including gender (e.g., Mesch and Manor, 1998; Hidalgo and Hernández, 2001), age (Pretty et al., 2003), length of residence (Hay, 1998; Knez, 2005), and the number of years of education (Mesch and Manor, 1998). Thus, these variables were included not only to assess the representativeness of the sample but also to assess the influence this variable on place identity as one of the research contributions (see chapter three). Therefore, it is important to ensure the sample of both methods questionnaire and interview covers all types of socio-demographic.

Accordingly, since this research is based a random sampling strategy, the effort was made to balance the sample. The probability sample was chosen in this study because it is more expected to produce representative samples, it has a potentiality of reduction a very 'biased' sample and it is able to estimate the actual population parameter (Blaikie, 2000). According to De Vaus (2002), this type of strategy may increase the 'sampling error' between the sample and the population thus the sample likely is not perfectly representative. Therefore, in order to increase the currency scion-demographic characteristics. The questionnaires were distributed in different places and institutions including a university, colleges, schools, clinics and hospitals, an iron and steel factory, banks, shops owners, public cafes, restaurants, and others. See Chapter Five for further details about the case study.

Of the 450 questionnaires distributed, 250 were eventually collected and 49 were ignored because of highly missing values. A number of 176 questionnaires were completely conducted and used in this study. At the end of the questionnaire, respondents were asked if they would like to participate in a follow-up interview. As a result, forty people agreed to be involved the interview section and listed their contact details in order to arrange a suitable time and venue for a face-to-face interview. However, the snowball technique became more useful in approaching interviewees, particularly female participants.

4.6.2.3 Questionnaire Design

Initially, the questionnaire opens with brief personality and social background profile of the researcher and the purpose of the study. The questionnaire covered a number of sections, beginning with questions about Socio-demographic background, following by questions addressing perception, meanings and attachment. The following sections explain and justify the questionnaire design.

i.   Socio-Demographic Characteristics

The first part covers socio-demographic variables that include age, gender, the level of education, occupation and length of residence, in order to understand how these factors might relate to differing experiences of place. Hence, the objective here is to obtain a demographic status of the respondent's characteristics. It aims also to make sure, that the sample will represent equally all segments of society and avoid a basis on the population characteristic (as discussed in the sampling section). This is also involving a question about the length of residence, which is considered an important variable to predict place attachment (see Chapter Three).

ii.   Frequency of Visiting

The second part of questioner consists multiple choice questions about the usage of place data. In their study on the image of Milan and Rome as seen by their residents, Francescato and Mebane (1973) observed that the inclusion of

activity information in environmental perception (e.g. how people often visit a place etc.) along with choice and schema scale provides a vital source in gaining a better understanding of place imagery. Thus, in this research, the questionnaire involved questions about the frequency and purpose of visiting the city centre in order to realise how physical environment plays in the whole schema of a Misurata's image and how these noticeable features of the environment have influenced the lives of people's inhabitant.

iii. *Perception Scale*

Questions dealt with the perception scale involved three subsets: in the first, respondents were asked to identify the first three features that come to their mind when they think of the city centre. This question deals with the identifying the perceived similarities of features that determine the city centre character are as seen by the residents. Several open-ended questions were posted to explore the underlying image form and to determine the salience of physical features and symbolic meanings related to place identity, as conveyed by the built environment. To do so, participants were asked to identify first three elements that come into their mind about the distinctive features of the city centre. Such a question as was observed by Lawson (2007, p. 231) is a useful tool yield to obtain a rich and interesting information about people's perceptions and experiences of a place. Perceiving distinctive features that determine place identity in the context of this study was found to be associated meanings. Specifically, a unique character was strongly associated with perceiving distinct features that composed with meanings. Hence, the questionnaire included a question identifying unique features and why they were seen as unique features. These questions also can assist to explore the relationship between distinctive features of the physical environment and meanings associated with place identity. Addition question concerning distinctiveness and meanings through unquietness was addressed by evaluation of the urban image. This was driven from Nasar's (1998) theory of assessment of physical environment cannot be isolated from the feelings that people have towards them, which can be assessed through their evaluation and asked them to what extent they like or dislike them.

Thus, in this study, people were asked to identify features that they think must be retained or improved in order to explore why certain features are important for them, e.g. is it because of historical significance, or because it has an architectural differences or locations…etc. this implies these features able to evoke a sort of attitude from observers, and in turn, based on Nasar' theory places that can evoke people's feelings are perceived as distinctive one.

iv.   *Meaning Scale*

Principally, these criteria were designed to find out the relationships between distinctive features and associated meanings. Following Green (1999) method of rating scale (MDS), respondents were asked to rate from strongly agree, agree, disagree and strongly disagree, their feelings about built environment features that they considered providing the greatest contribution to city centre identity. Symbolic meanings were assessed via a series of items attempted to measure respondent memories, important features for them, features associated with culture and features has a certain meaning for them. Meaning items were assessed via a question that asked respondents to rate their feelings with different elements of their lake on a 4-point Likert-type scale were used to ranging from 'strongly agree' to 'strongly disagree' (Stedman, 2003). This theme consisted of six items, e.g. 'the best place for earning money'; 'this place means a lot to me'; 'the place recall me a lot of memories'; I feel traditional parts more meaningful than modern one'; 'this city is part of my cultural background' (Hidalgo, 2013). People also were asked to name three features that they consider having a symbolic meaning for the city and the reasons behind their answer. Other questions related to meanings were investigated more in the interview, to reveal deeper explanations about feelings.

v.   *The Place Attachment Scale*

As it has been discussed in literature review chapter two, place attachment has many forms such as personal, social, functional and physical attachment. Consequently, in this study, place attachment scale was planned to contain four subscales; including emotional attachment, social attachment, physical

attachment and functional attachment. In this set contains 35 items in total, which has been used previously by other authors (Hidalgo and Hernandez, 2001; Speller, 2000a; Ujang, 2008; Mannarini et al., 2006). Feelings of respondents about the attachment to the city centre was assessed via a question that asked respondents to rate their opinion with different elements of their lake on a 5-point Likert scale 'strongly agree', 'slightly agree', 'neither', 'slightly disagree' and 'strongly disagree' (Stedman, 2003). The theme of emotional attachment involves eight items, which were dealt with directly or indirectly, measuring the psychological factors, such as a sense of safety, comfort, feeling pride, positive feelings and love. The social attachment component has a six items assessed the feeling proud to the community e.g. I feel attached to this city because of: 'I was born and grew up here'; 'this city has a cohesion of social fabric'; ' a conservative society'; 'sharing events'; ' security' and 'the commitment that people have to the society' (ibid). Followed by physical attachment with nine items 5-point Likert scale assesses the qualities of the physical environment that has the ability to evoke people's attachment.

These items also partly assess the evaluation and motivation of people's experience they develop with the place (e.g. Kyle et al., 2004). I like this place because of: 'it cleans and organise'; 'has a modern street shopping'; 'it is an accessible place'; 'has attractive landscape features'; 'has attractive façade'; 'has major streets on it'; and 'increase separation and freedom'. The final section deals with the functional attachment included 12 items addressing to what extent city centre achieve their needs, feeling comfort, support desired activities, options and facilities provided and assess the level of engagement with a place. A copy of the questionnaire is contained in Appendix A.

4.6.2.4 Data Analysis

The data obtained from the questionnaire was processed using SPSS software. This programme was used in order to conclude the mean regularity distribution and to perform cross-tabulation. The statistical findings were shown in charts and tables, using Microsoft packages. This statistical information was

used to support the other evidence from literature review, observation and interviews with respondents.

The data obtained from the questionnaire was processed using SPSS package software. The first step was entering all questionnaires one by one into the SPSS. Then the data was ready to be analysed and presented in charts, table and graphs. The SPSS software, in this study, mainly used the descriptive statistics such as frequencies and percentages in data analysis. This statistical information was presented in findings chapter combined with other data from interviews, mental maps, and observation. However, the cross-tabulation and correlations were also used in order to observe the variations between socio-economic background, age, and gender in terms of their perception of Misurata. In addition, in the final stage, the cross-tabulation and correlation used to observe any significant link between three major concepts of this research: place attachment, meaning, and perception and how they are interrelated to identify and measure the place identity.

Based on the Likert scale described by Bernard (2011), the survey results were classified into four groups with an equal range (m = 1.0). The data were then descriptively analysed using crosstab computing means, standard deviations and standard errors (see also Moulay et al., 2017).

4.6.3 Phase 2: Interviews

The second phase of data collection was the in-depth interviews, which were conducted after the questionnaire had been collected. It is evident that the interview can provide a rich valuable data from the respondents' experiences, thoughts, and feelings about certain phenomena. In the other words, it is a conversation in which the interviewer stimulates the interviewees to express themselves in their own words. Thus, the interview was planned to obtain deeper answers by asking how and why questions to increase the chance to probe more into insightful details and to reveal new evidence. This following section will

describe the interview schedule, the sample selection, processing the data and analysis.

4.6.3.1 Interview Schedule

The practical considerations in the development of the interview schedule in this research, ranged from being 'barely structured' in the pilot study to being semi-structured during the actual case study interviews. It should be noted that some issues were also addressed in order to enhance research instruments and procedures. Indeed, some additional questions were added as a sequence of probing. According to Bernard (2011, p. 217), *'the key to successful interviewing is learning how to probe effectively- that is, to stimulate a respondent to produce more information, without injecting yourself so much into the interaction that you only get a reflection of yourself in the data'*. Meaning that direct and indirect questioning, silence and inter operation are an important part of an interview.

Nevertheless, the semi-interview type was carried out with three prepared major themes guiding the conservation (see Appendix B). Individuals were first asked to describe the distinctive features of the city that easily recognisable and why they found them distinct. This part also is consisted questions about their evaluation about the city centre such like and dislike. The second part of the interview focused on a special or important of the city centre and talk about why and how were important to them. Third section interviews were asked about their feelings towards the city centre, how and why they feel attached to it, the place, and talk about why and how the places were important to them, asked them to talk about experience, feelings, events, and certain position, positive or negative impact.

During the interviews, direct and indirect questions were used in order to enable interviewees to talk openly about their experience. The researcher also was careful not to speak academically or formally to participants i.e. avoiding academy terminology during discussing to allow them to use their own words to describe their feelings, experiences, and their ties to the city centre of Misurata, using a phenomenological approach to investigation. Following up Smaldone et

al. (2005, p. 402) the manner used was an 'interested listening', in which the researcher explained and encouraged the participants for answering, *'but remained neutral as to the correctness of their responses'*. (See Appendix B for a copy of semi-structured interview schedule guide).

Unlike questionnaire, open-ended questions in the interview were used to reveal more detail and deeper understanding about people's insight feelings and experience. The interview schedule was set out to keep to the conversation within three themes illustrated above. The data obtained from the interview will serve to establish the main research findings themes based on the product of grounded theory approach (as discussed earlier).

4.6.3.2 Sampling for the Interview

As in the questionnaire, the socio-demographic profile was considered in the sampling process. The selection of interviewees was carefully determined according to socio-demographic variables as was done in questionnaire task. Nasar (2008) suggested that the selection of participants is an important variable to measure environmental perceptions, which differ with participants characteristics. Similarly, Proshansky et al. (1983) assert that concepts such as cognitions, feelings, and ideas about a certain physical setting vary by personality profile such as gender, age groups and occupation. Therefore, it is important to consider the variations in the participants in order to achieve the target of the research and avoid any biases in the sample.

However, there were some difficulties concerning the spread of demographic variables since not everyone who could be persuaded to take part was accepted. However, an effort was made to recruit participants in order to achieve a sampling balance within the demographic range. The effort was made to ensure that the sample rationally well balanced according to the gender, the age, occupation, and level of education. As a result, the sample contained twelve males and nine females with only four who were not born in Misurata but these had lived in the city since their childhood (see Chapter Five section 5.16). Unlike the questionnaire, very few elderly people and uneducated people volunteered

to take part for the interview. Hence, the majority of participants were educated people. There was, therefore, little variation in the socio-demographic variables in the interview participants compares to the questionnaire.

In this study, the selection of the participants for the interview was based on two strategies. The first involved a random sampling from the questionnaire survey. Following up the questionnaire, 40 respondents were agreed to participant face-to-face interview; given their contact details for arranging a suitable appointment. The second strategy used was snowball sampling, which involves *'identifying cases of interest from people who know people who know what cases are information-rich'* (Miles & Huberman, 1994, p. 28 cited from Smaldone et al., 2005, p. 401). The main criteria for sample selection were individuals' sex, age, the level of education and length of residence. This approach allowed increasing the number of the female interviewees, in which 10 women agreed to be involved in the face-to-face interview, while one woman disagreed to participate unless it was not recorded. In general, both strategies were used to increase the diversity in the sample.

Eventually, around 22 people, living in Misurata, were interviewed. Twelve of the respondents were men and ten were women who lived in different parts of the city (residential neighbourhoods, and other sectors). This sample size of 20 to 30 is a quite acceptable and common with similar studies (see Speller, 2000). Likewise, Creswell (1998) reported that the best sample size for the interview for grounded theory research is between 20 to 30 interviews.

The duration of the interviews of 20 minutes to 1-hour duration was carried out by the researcher, in either public spaces, café, or restaurants to enable a feeling of confidence amongst participants and friendly conservation. The convenient places for females were in their place of work, as they demanded this for the purposes of religious and cultural reasons. All interviews were conducted face-to-face. The local residents of Misurata were interviewed in order to obtain information on their attitudes, feelings, and perceptions about quality of the city centre, image and place attachment.

4.6.3.3 Data Transcription, Coding and Analysis

Analysing the interview data is one of the most challenging tasks in qualitative research. It requires a long, interactive process of identifying key themes, developing an elaborate coding scheme, and eventually synthesising the results into a textual narrative for the article (Groat and Wang, 2002).

In order to conceptualise a broad sense of analyzing the process of the interview, there are four major stages for the data analysing: transcription; coding; identifying key categories and finally writing up the findings (see Figure 4.8). The outcome themes of this analysis should eventually answer the research questions of this study (as discussed earlier this study based on grounded theory approach). Thus, this study is a thematic analysis of themes elicited from the data (Pope et al., 2000).
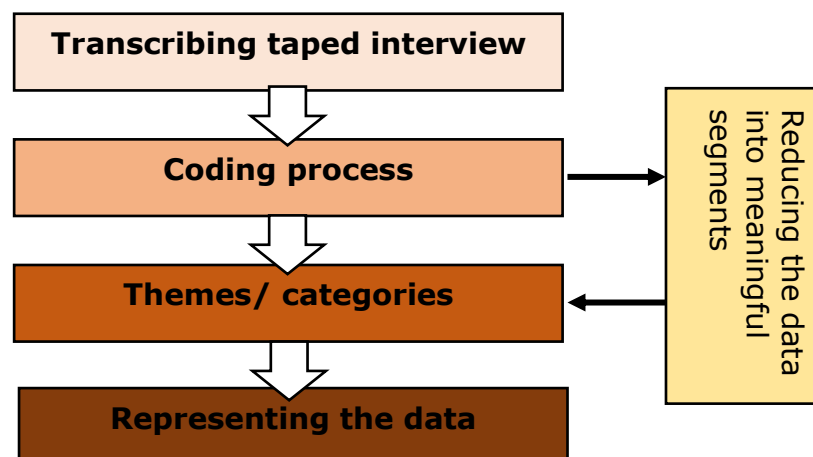
Figure 4.8: Stages of interview data analysis adapted from (Creswell, 2007, p. 149).

Initially, all the interviews were tape recorded with sign permission of the interviewees. The tape recordings were then transcribed literally into verbatim written word format documents, which were then transferred into NVivo (a software programme used for analysing qualitative data) (Bazeley and Jackson, 2013). The analysis was begun with open coding, in which the transcriptions were read several times in order to fine tune and ensure the accuracy of particular words or phrases that described the meanings of the schematic of the

133

text. Initially, these words or phrases were often labelled with those used by the participants to describe their experiences and feelings towards the place. The key point is to focus on *'illumination, understanding and extrapolation rather than causal determination, prediction and generalisation'* (Patton, 1990, p. 424).

As this process of extraction proceeded, the identification of remarkable recurrent and broader themes of meaning was slowly developed. Themes and sub-themes were compared to observe if there was any similarity of differentiation between them. Each interview transcription and the data expressed by each individual were considered as important in itself as a separate case.
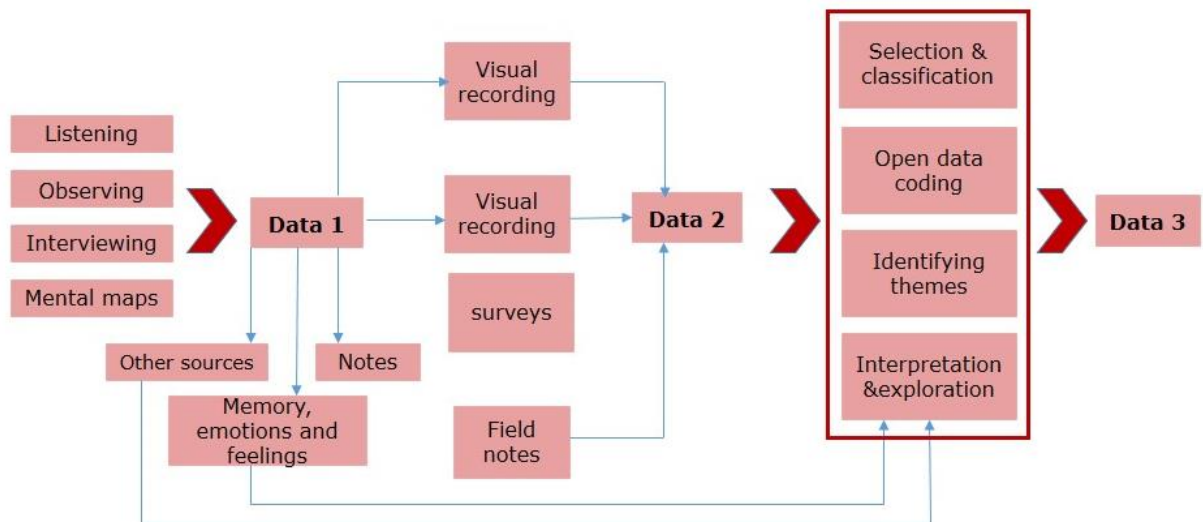
Figure 4.9: Qualitative data analysis developed from (Creswell, 2012).

The stages are taken to code the transcriptions followed most of the procedures drawn by (Smaldone et al., 2005) in his guide for interview analysis (see also Hycner, 1985; Miles & Huberman, 1994). Starting with the first interview; initially, the inductive strategy was used to allow codes emerge from the data instead of setting it a priori. Following up first interview coding, the same procedures were then used for the rest interviews. As the coding process continued, more codes emerged, look at any differences or similarities between them and the refine codes were applied. The establishment of themes and sub-

themes of codes was also identified as the coding continued (Appendix F provides the initial number of codes and themes have emerged).

Toward the end of the coding process, it was essential to make compressions and cross-referencing between all cases and categories to obtain further explanations to the case study. This allows identifying the elements and key reasons of individual's in relation to their perception, features that are seen as a special or important to them, their evaluation of the city centre, and reasons of their attachment to it. Table 4.6 illustrates the analysed themes that have been connected to the perception, meanings and attachment inductors). The finding on each theme is discussed in the finding Chapters (Chapter 6, 7 and 8) under subsections of each concept.

4.6.4   Phase 3: Sketch Maps (Exercise)

In the last portion of the interview, using similar methods proposed by Lynch (1960), Milgram (1977), and Wessel (2012), on a sheet of paper, respondents were asked, 'please make a rough sketch of this area drawing from memory. Don't worry about your graphic skills'. The intention was given to indicate any noticeable features that can use easily to identify the city centre area. (Example of mental map sheet is illustrated in Appendix E).

The findings were consistent with findings of past studies who used sketch maps, such as those of Francescato and Mebane (1973), which noticed that sketch maps were undoubtedly a difficult task with certain groups of people. For example, elderly people, uneducated people, and even in many cases educated people who refused to draw maps even when they were willing to take part in other forms of the study. As a result, efforts were made to guide respondents to draw a map through providing some examples or added explanations about the major purpose of the sketch map. People were also asked to focus only on the city centre rather whole the city when creating their drawings. In doing so, as suggested by Mendoza and Morén-Alegret (2013), people can provide more details about their experience. However, respondents sometimes handed back

the paper with just rough streets or parts of the city centre. It could be suggested, therefore, that, in this case, the sketch map as an instrument for data collection is a less useful tool when encouraging all population groups to participate.

In total, thirteen sketch maps were successfully accomplished, including seven from male respondents and eight from female respondents. The research used the same sample size of Tan and Ujang (2012) for the mental mapping. All of these participants were from the educated class and their ages ranged between twenty-two and forty-seven years old. Their occupations included a teacher, a technical, architect, informative, employees and house-wife. Following Francescato and Mebane (1973), the criteria employed in this study for analysing the sketch maps were based on the following:

i.   Identifying the distinctive elements;

ii. Identifying the obvious physical structure (Lynch's theory); and

iii. Identifying salient focal points.

4.6.5   Phase 4: Observation

The selected areas for the observation study were identified based on the most frequently mentioned places that were indicated by respondents in the interviews, mental maps and questionnaires. As a result, there were six specific sites within the city centre of Misurata, which were selected for the site observations. These areas included: the traditional area (including Nasser Square, Al Sheikh Mosque, Al Alee Mosque and Traditional area), and other modern streets such as Tripoli Street, Sana Street, Benghazi Street, Al Hilal Street, and Abdu-Allah Garieb Street. The major aim of the observation was to observe the following aspects:

i.   Most importantly, to compare and to correspond to the types of activities associated with place identity in the places perceived as distinctive by people; and

ii. Recording overall noticeable characteristics of the city centre such as its spatial qualities (tangible and intangible), interactions, and street façades.

The strategy used to record the observable activities included a prepared checklist, photographs, sketches and quick comments (see Appendix D for the checklist form). Marshall and Rossman (2010) suggest that both an informal and formal checklist during the observation task can provide the useful systemic recording. Likewise, Gehl (2011, p. 24) suggests that '*…photography is a useful tool for fast-freezing situations for later analysis that are difficult to fully comprehend with the naked eye'*. Thus, a variety of photographs from different viewpoints and at different times were taken for later analysis.

Field observation was carried out through a systematic observation, to clarify any observable features of the environment and the pattern of activities among the city centre users, covering the salient form of interactions. The observations ran from 10th to 22nd August and continued through 1st to 10th October 2014, including weekdays and weekends from 8.00 am to 11.00 pm to cover all kind of activities occurring in the city centre. The '*mapping analyses'* technique used for analysing the data through using symbols representing users and types of activity were plotted on maps of the studied areas (see Sepe, 2013; Gehl, 2011). The situations were then recorded as simple maps accompanied by sketches, photographs and brief notes.

The type of instruments used in the site observation to obtain the data were photographs, brief notes, symbolic mapping and sketches, which will be analysed qualitatively (Marshall and Rossman, 2010). The data obtained from the site observations were subsequently merged with the other data within an appropriate theme or category in order to validate the findings. The observations, therefore, provided a useful source of references in the analysis (see Appendix G).

4.6.6 Phase 5: Documentary Sources

Documents can also give essential sources of evidence for a case study (Yin, 2009). In this research, key documents were obtained from the field study to enrich useful information in data analysis. The purpose was on obtaining

materials from different departments of the local authority including records, maps, reports, and photographs. Specific attention was paid to how Misurata had developed and what factors had influenced its physical characteristics.

Although there are very limited published sources available concerning the urban design issues, including place identity, in Misurata, the main sources of the documentary regarding the city centre of Misurata were obtained mainly from the city hall of Misurata, but other departments, individuals and local libraries. The most important of these data sources is the report that was published by Matthew et al, (1982) entitled by Misurata Central Area Planning Study, which consists of a proposed plan and urban design guidelines that tended to guide development change of the city centre in the future. Additional information such as maps (CAD files) also was obtained from the municipality of Misurata. Old pictures and maps were gathered from local people who agreed to loan them to be used in this study. All of these sources were used to establish the introduction to the case study presented in the next chapter.

4.7 The Limitation of the Methodology

It should be borne in mind that the study has a number of limitations, but all possible efforts were made to overcome them in order to avoid their influence on the outcome of the entire study. Following sections presents the main methodological limitations of the study.

The first limitation is regarded the limitation of published papers, work and information on the chosen case study of Misurata. While the research was able to access information about demographic information and some historical background for Misurata and Libya in general, data regarding urban planning and design were more difficult to gather. The available data were fragmented and not classified or presented in appropriate usable formats to be used as a form of secondary sources. In addition, the absence of effective state institutions under the current situation in Libya. It is not surprising that this research happens to be the first attempt in Libya; hence, it was extremely difficult to find

documentations, which could be useful to inform the same type of study. However, all possible efforts were made to overcome these difficulties. This includes using the primary data gathered through the fieldwork. All data regarding, history, old pictures, maps, reports and other documents were obtained by personally visiting some institutions such as city hall, local libraries and persons (i.e. local engineering, planners and architects).

The second limitation of the research is related to socio-cultural and religious factors that constrained empirical data collection, especially recruiting interviewers. Furthermore, it is forbidden, in the Islamic religion, for an adult Muslim male to be with an adult female Muslim without the presence of her relatives. To avoid any biases in the data and for confidence, women were engorged to be involved in the study by the agreement to make the interview in the place of their working with the presence of their colleagues. Most interviews women participants were taken place in institutions such as school, office, pharmacy, clinic, college, office etc. To avoid any ambiguity in the terminology used in conversation, the researcher used simple language that could be understood by everyone.

The third limitation of the methodology occurs in the drawing mapping technique. The limitation of this method was an impaired ability to draw a mental map by all categories of participants. As expected, people from certain classes tended to refuse to draw maps because they found it is difficult to draw a map for the city center or even part of it. The mantel map technique as the one of the most accepted technique to measure place identity through cognition factor, in this study, it seems that this tool may be found useless particularly with elderly and uneducated people. However, drawing map technique, alongside the other methods, provides a plenty data in the perception study in the way that people can draw features spontaneously.

Forth limitation was with difficulties of analysing the mixed methods data. The challenge was concerned the vast amount of row data that need to be coded and analysed. The process of interview analysis from the transcription, coding,

reading, recording, defining primarily theme and final theme of the findings took a long time. Thus, transcribing, coding and clustering analytical process are immensely time to consume, in addition, the drafting, thinking, redrafting appeared to be an ended process.

4.8 The Chapter Conclusion

This chapter has described the methods used in this investigation and it has begun by introducing the knowledge claim, strategy of inquiry and conceptual framework. It went then to the discussion of using the qualitative and quantitative methodologies and their choice based on a review of previous research and existing theories on research methods. It is evident that mixed methods can enrich and validate the data collection through data triangulation. Therefore, the mixed methods were chosen as the best source for data collection, these methods included (questionnaire, interview, site observation and mental mapping drawings). The analysis procedures were based on the rationale-inductive strategy which relied on the emerging categories from the data (data-led analysis). It also describes the procedure used in this investigation, which gives an account of how the research was carried out. By adopting such an approach and methodologies, it is hoped that the data collected from the field study would provide sufficient information to answer the research questions.

In short, it is evident from the previous studies on the topic of place identity that the approach to the research can be undertaken either quantitatively or qualitatively. It is also apparent that to study the identity of the urban environment, one can rely on people's perception, recognition and recall of the urban environment. In addition, field observation, interview, surveys and sketch mapping are considered to be reliable techniques for analysing people's images, feelings and attachment to their urban environment. The next chapter presents the general introduction to the study area and discusses the issue of place identity within Libyan context. Chapter 6 will then proceed to present the results and discussion of this study.

5 CHAPTER FIVE: INTRODUCTION TO THE CASE STUDY: MISURATA, LIBYA

5.1 Introduction

As background to the case study context, this chapter presents a general introduction to the specified area of study. The research problem has been mentioned in the introduction to the research so this chapter will chiefly be focusing on the physical characteristics of the city centre of Misurata as well as giving contextual information for the analysis that follows. However, some existing issues of place identity in the city centre of Misurata will be briefly addressed. This is to ascertain the importance of the urban design policies on the development of the city centre. This chapter also presents the criteria of choosing the case study, the research design and socio-demographical characteristics of the participants.

This chapter is divided into six parts. The first part highlights the location of Misurata in relation to the Libya and to the world as a whole. It also addresses the socio-economic features of Misurata. This is then followed secondly by a brief discusses the historical background and urban transformation. The characteristics of the city centre are then examined in the third section, which provides a general profile to the selected area under study. The fourth part highlights the current issues associated with place identity in Misurata. The fifth section presents the selection criteria of the study area, the research design and personal information of the participants. The final section provides a conclusion of the chapter.

5.2 Misurata in Relation to Libya

Libya is located on the central coast of North Africa. Libya is bordered by the Mediterranean Sea to the north, Egypt to the east, Sudan to the south-east, Chad and Niger to the south and Algeria and Tunisia to the west. The total area of the Libya is around 1.8 million square kilometres, making it the seventieth largest country in the world. The climate in the north of Libya reflects the Mediterranean in contrast to the south, which is characterised by a Saharan climate. According to the last census in 2006 (Ministry of Urban Planning, 2007), Libyan has a total population of 6.6 million people. '*Libya has a low density of population because of the small number of people living in a large land of mountainous, desert and coastal areas'* (Abubrig, 2012, p. 107).

Geographically, Libyan divided into three main regions namely Tripolitania (north-western), Fezzan (southern zone) and Cyrenaica (north-eastern) and differ in terms of cultural composition and the rate of urbanisation. Libya is one of the undergoing development countries in North Africa, having more than one quarter of its total population living in settlements with over 10,000 inhabitants. Urbanisation took place most rapidly between 1965 and 1970, during the pre-independence period.

Land Use in 2013
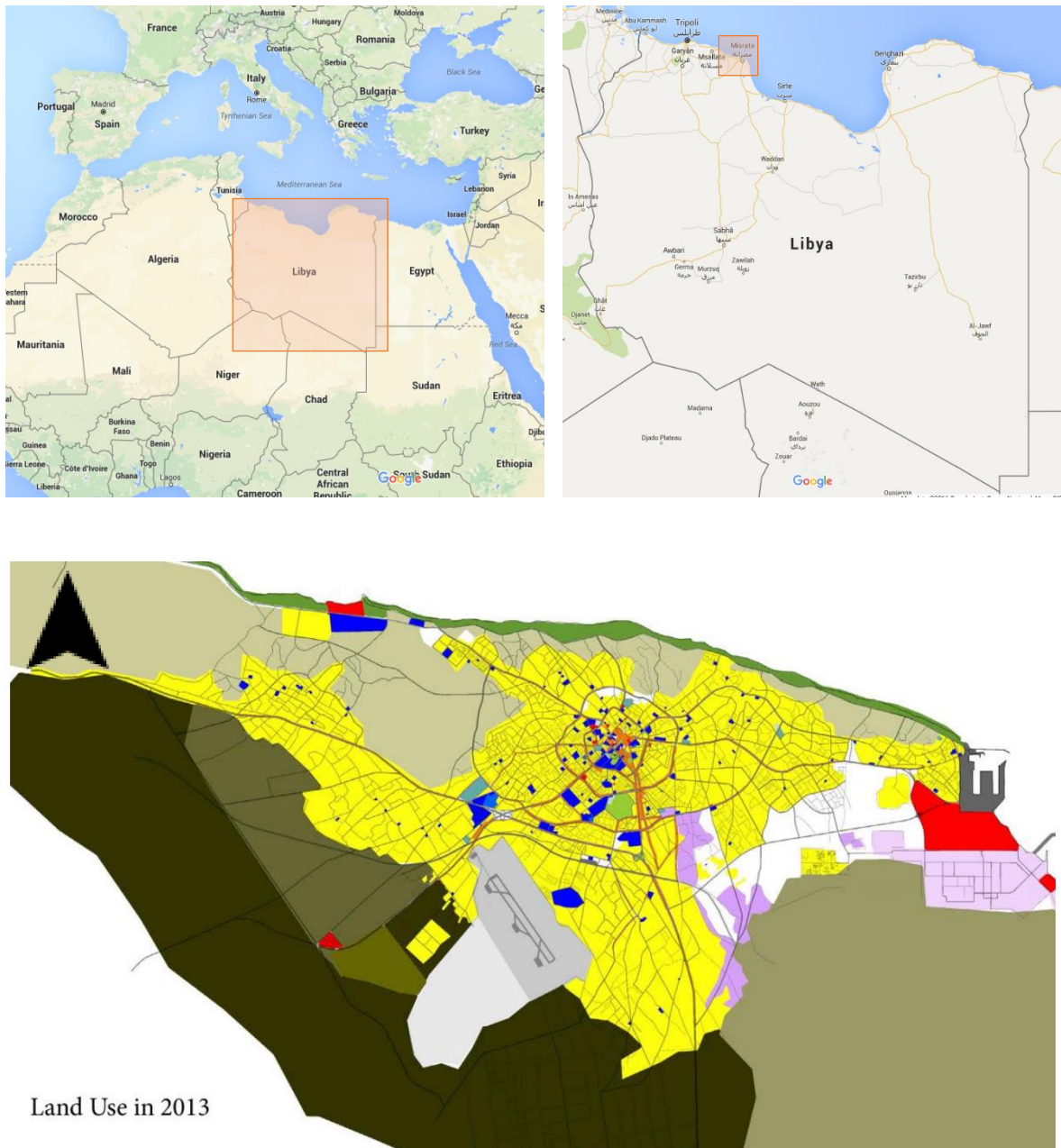
Figure 5.1: Geographic location of Libya on top left, the geographic location of Misurata within Libyan in the top right and location of Misurata in the context of Tripoli region in the end. Source: www.google.co.uk/maps, accessed in 22/01/2016. Elmagalfta, (2014, p. 69).

The city under study, Misurata is one of five major sub-regions within the authority of the Tripoli region (Tripolitania) and has an area of 26 square kilometres, equivalent to 14% of the total of the Tripolitania area. Misurata city is the third largest city in Libya (after Tripoli and Benghazi). It is a relatively small coastal city; it is located in the north eastern part of the Tripoli region and west side of Benghazi on the Mediterranean coast. It is about 200 km from the

143

east side of Tripoli. It is one important administrative, commercial and social services for the eastern region. According to the National Consultative Office (NCO, 2007), Misurata is identified as the major administration of the administrative area of the region and is under the Municipality of Middle lands (NCO, 2007).

The city is located in a relatively flat area at an altitude of about 15 meters above sea level (NCO, 2007). Misurata is located between latitude 33 31, and 23 32 in the north, and between longitudes 36 14 and 15 22 (Aniba, 2010). The location of the city creates a dualism of sea and sand, bounded by the sea to the north and east to the south by golden sands dotted with palms trees. The climate in Misurata is moderate and is influenced by the geography of the Mediterranean coast.

5.3 The Population

The population of Misurata as reported in the Structure Plan was 366,000 inhabitants based on the 2006 census. This is accounting for 10.50% of the Tripolitania region population of 3.5 million inhabitants (NCO, 2007). The percentage of population growth during the period 1984-2000 in the city of Misurata was 1.93%. The population growth rate is expected to rise between 2006 and 2015 to reach the number of 2.9%. Accordingly, by 2015, the population is estimated to have grown to 405,000 at annual growth rate of 2.1% (NCO, 2007, pp. 35-36).

The age composition of the population of Misurata is closely linked to the increasing annual rate. In 2006, according to the latest census, 35% of the population was under 15 years old; this percentage was dropped from 42% in 1992, while only 5% of population aged above 65 years old. This gives an indication that the age structure of the population is prominent in the youth phase (ibid).

Table 5.1 shows the age groups according to the effect of population rate (increase or decrease) between the years 1995 and 2025.

Table 5.1: Distribution of the total population by age in Misurata in thousands.

Year		Age group				
		0-14	15-25	25-64	65+	Total
1995		123	67	92	11	293
2005		118	82	153	14	367
2015	Expect low growth	120	79	219	20	438
2015	Expect high growth	136	80	236	21	473
2025	Expect low growth	120	79	274	31	503
2025	Expect high growth	158	85	309	32	584

Source: (NCO, 2007, p. 38).

5.4 Economic Aspects

Historically, Misurata was known as a market town (Blake, 1968), which the central square market had sell luxury carpets, food, textiles traditional clothing and other goods. It has since played an active role in the commercial trade movement in the present (NCO, 2007). The steel mill industry (owned by Libyan Government) is one of the essential income sources of employments. The role of Misurata's marina and airport played an important role to propose a free market zone, which will be the largest investment project in Misurata and the country as a whole. Hence, Misurata is a promising city for the economic growth as it represents an important centre for business and industry in the region of Tripoli (ibid).

5.5 Social Aspects

In terms of social life, the Islamic religion is essential in maintaining the daily life as well as for the structure of the society. Islam produces guidelines and regulates the daily behaviour and defines all social relations among all members of the family and other social relations in the community (e.g. visiting relatives

and friends, and marriage arrangements). Significantly, family and a sense of attachment to the community are still strong in the Libyan society (Essayed, 1981). The family is the important unit acts as a 'core' for the social status of individuals within society. People from the same family background mainly live in same neighborhoods, which make the social ties strong. It is also still common for grandparents, parents and their children to live together in the same home. Religious occasions such as fasting in Ramadan, Eid, and Fridays and five daily prayers are particularly important in Libyan individuals and collective daily lives.

Visiting is another traditional aspect still maintained among Libyan society. Indeed, Buchanan (1975) cited from Shawesh (2000, p. 80) pointed out that

'Visitors and visiting are important aspects of social life in Libya. Visiting takes different forms, from the individual or groups, from a relative or a friend to social visits. The size of visiting varies depending on the type of occasion as well as on the type of the characteristics of the people. For example, during Ramadan, many visits and activities take place between families especially during the night when people break the fast and spend celebratory time together. As such, family and visiting are central components of life that continue to exist in Libyan society today and as such are core parts of its identity'.

5.6 Attachment to Misurata

Misurata means a lot to its inhabitants. The inhabitants of Misurata greatly love their city, which was strongly demonstrated during the war. It is known that Misurata was deeply and violently exposed to the bombing and siege during the events of the revolutions of the Arab Spring 2011. However, the population did not abandon the city to other safer towns and gave an example of solidarity and social cohesion to defend their city and liberate it from the siege. After the war, people were quick to rebuild and organise life in the city. This reflection gives an indication that residents of Misurata have a strong attachment to their city, which made it a good case study for place identity. Therefore, it is aimed, in this study,

to discover the influences factors of the place attachment and meanings in regenerating urban places for the well-being of the inhabitants.

5.7 Historical Background of Misurata

In order to understand the identity of a certain place or city, it is important to review the historical background that underlies its formation. Hence, this review aims to highlight the major factors that have influenced and contributed to the city's formation in terms of both the physical and social characteristics.

The history of Misurata is full of events that have contributed significantly to its formation. The name of Misurata was derived from the Berber tribe called 'Hawwara' who lived in this area, perhaps during the Roman era before the first Arab group arrived, and this Berber tribe were called 'Misrata' (Singh and Khan, 2001, p. 1004). Mattingly (2003) reported that prior to Islamic rule the town had existed during the Roman Empire era and that its initial Arabic name derived from its original Roman name of 'Thubactis'. Indeed, however, there is no specific date for the construction of the city, although some recent archaeological discoveries indicate that there was some sort of urban stability on this site during the Roman rule of the North Africans (Ermida, 2007a).

In its early history, Misurata was known as a commercial city and flourished due to its business relationship with Southeast European (Venice), when the major trade activities were exporting wool, olive oil and salt and importing silk and other diverse goods from far distances (Ermida, 2007b; Montaser, 2013; Blake, 1968). It has been stated several times that the current name of Misurata was known from the 13th century, particularly after the changing of the path of pilgrims to cross through the city (Montaser, 2013). Over time, people increasingly abandoned their nomadic lifestyle and began to settle in permanent dwellings within the city's boundary. Subsequently, the first scenes of stability and urbanisation began with the end of thirteen century when the first mosque (Al Alee Mosque) was built in the city (Blake, 1968).

5.8 Urban transformation

Ottomans' period (1551-1911)

In the seventeenth century, because of strategic location and its port, served it as a caravan supply centre for pilgrims who travelled from the Morocco, Algeria and Tunisia to 'Makah' (Mattingly, 2003). Between the years 1551 and 1911, Misurata was administered by the Ottoman Empire and a governorate office called 'Mutasarifiya' was built to facilitate the administration of the Ottoman district officer. The town centre of Misurata expanded intensively during the Turkish period. This phase is characterised by the existence of two types of houses; the first being one-story houses with a courtyard, which were derived from the Turkish style, and the second type had the Arabic and local character (Figure 5.2). Thus, it is important to consider the influence of Islamic civilisation on Libyan cities for future development in order to build any kind of continuity. The core of Misurata is believed had developed during this period.

Figure 5.2: The Administrative building of Ottoman's constructed in the 19th century (Mutasarifiya). Source: www.delcampe.netold, accessed in 13/ 4/2016.
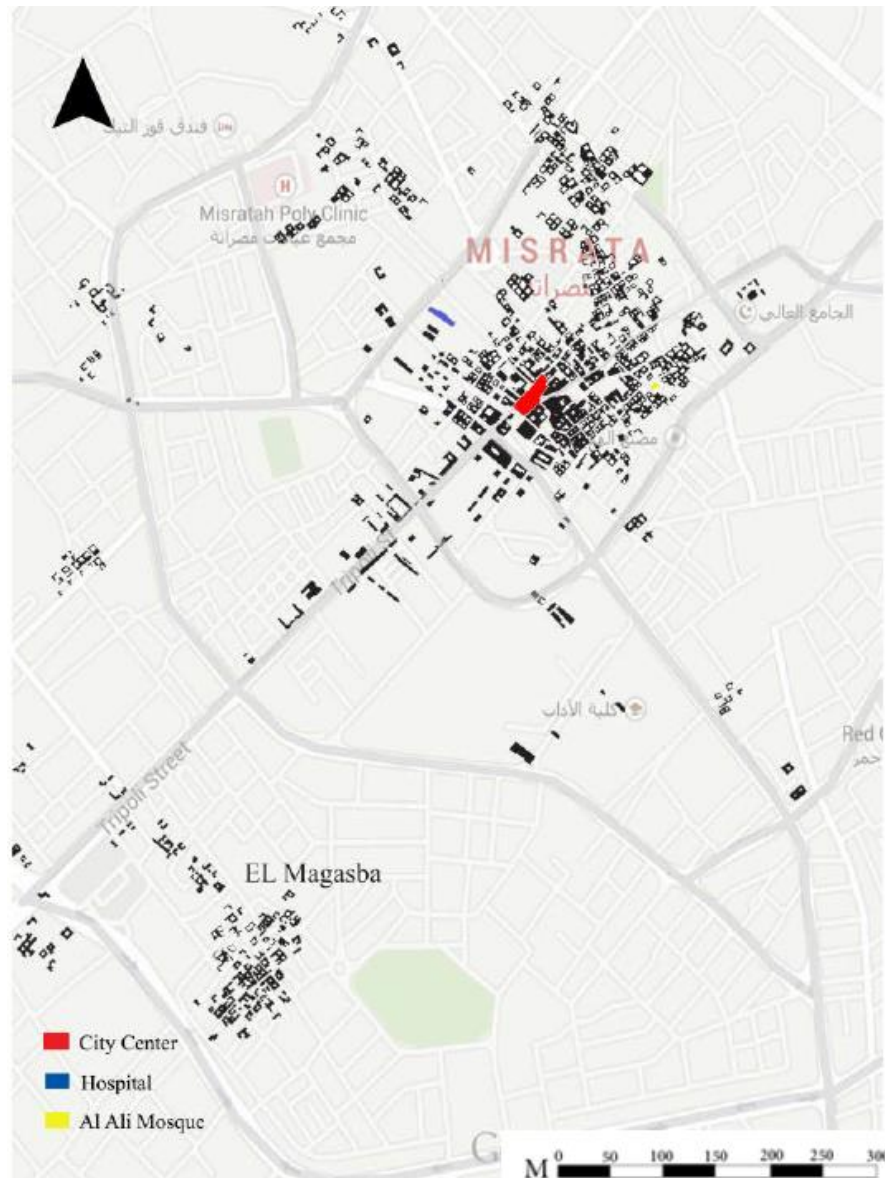
Figure 5.3: Misurata during the Ottoman's period. Source: (Elmagalfata, 2014, p. 58).

During the 19th century, Misurata was known as a market town (Blake, 1968), and many types of commercial activities took place within the town center. As a sequence, Misurata increasingly became primarily as a regional market led to the major development of the city, and the small scattered villages spread across, which is, later on, formed the basis of the current stability regions. This sequence of events on the economic trends has had a significant influence

on the identity of the city, which has been depicted as a market town until the present (See Figure 5.4).

Figure 5.4: The public spaces in the town were not only defined as trade deal activities but it also was a key place for social interaction. Source: Abdul-Karim, (2011, p. 17).

During the ottoman's period, 'the Islamic religion played a fundamental role in developing and maintaining the social structure and organisation of Islamic society which in the end was reflected in the formation of the physical built form' (Shawesh, 2000, p. 86). Indeed, all these sequential events have given to Misurata a certain identity and formulation. To sum up, traditional city of Misurata showed a strong identity and social ties reflected on their urban fabric and planning.
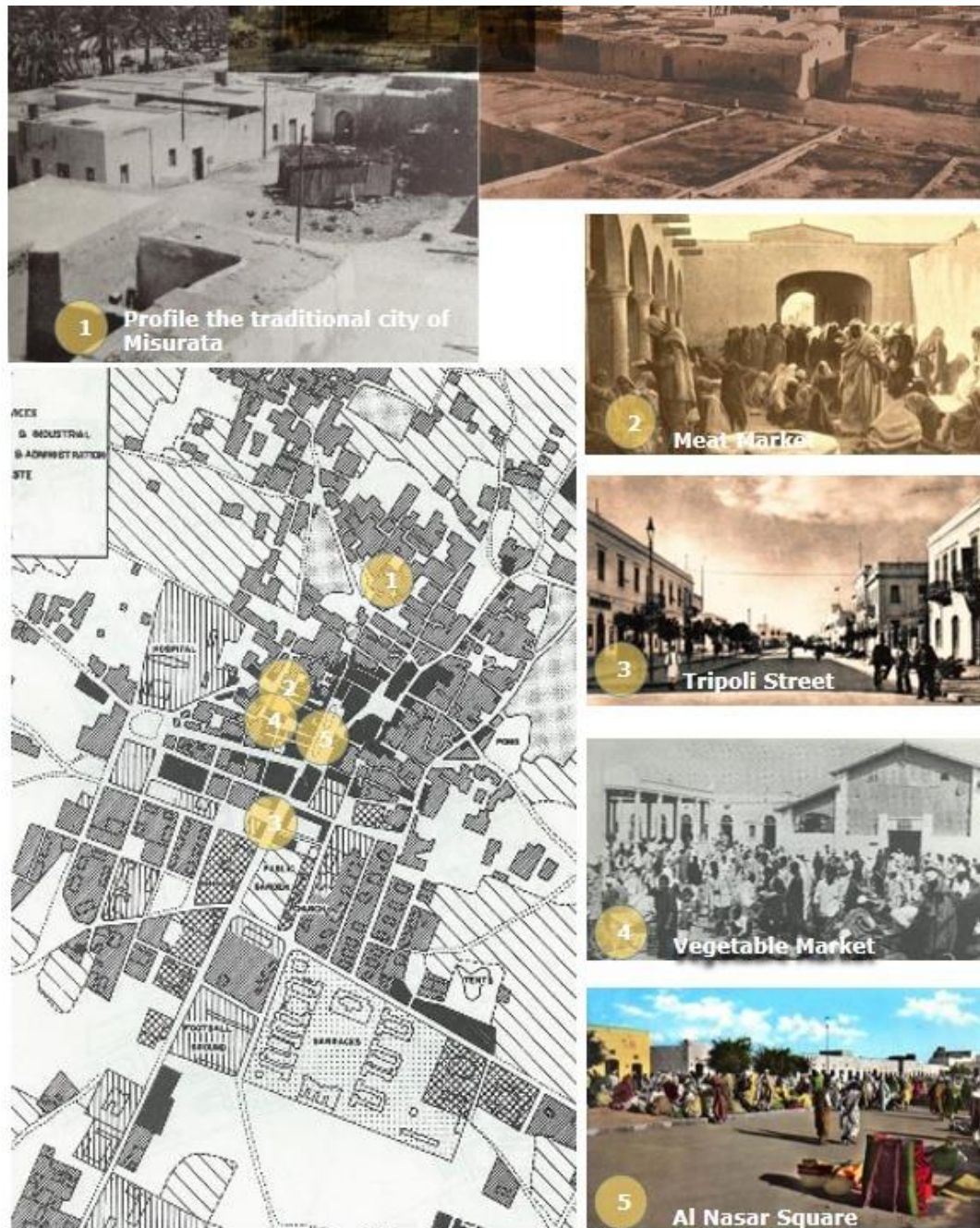
Figure 5.5: The urban scene of traditional twon centre of Misurata in mid 1960s.
Sources: Balke, (1968, pp.5-17).

Colonial period (1930-1945)

However, the first stage of transformation was occurred in the mid 1930s, when the Italian occupation began in Misurata. Consequently, the occupation overshadowed upon the local image of the city, which in turn has impacted,

implicitly or explicitly, on its identity. During the Fascism period, the urban environment in the centre of Misurata was transformed with many administrative offices, churches and public spaces constructed to Fascist ideology and policies on the confiscated lands. The colonial ideology was used to guide the proposed new plans, which meant emphasising the power and the civilisation of Italy through reflecting Italian culture and concepts and the creation of Fascist neo-classical architecture (Daza, 1982). Typically, the Libyan identity, image and culture were highly neglected by the Italian administration. This resulted in a massive gap between the natural features and historical values of the built environment during the growth process of the city.

Figure 5.6: Diagram shows the differences between the urban pattern of the traditional city (on the lefts side) and the new urban streets and buildings performed by Italian administration. Source: Montaser (2007, p. 222).

Post-independence period (1951-until now)

After the discovery of oil in Libyan in 1955, the urban and economic has gone up dramatically. In response to this rapid growth, many substantial development projects opened up, particularly in 1975, when spatial demands were created by

new socio-economic needs. Alongside this trend, a broader pattern is emerged turning to an architectural shift to vague characteristics. Subsequently, the urban forms and architecture of the most of the Libyan cities, including Misurata, have transformed towards modernity. Indeed, many buildings were designed and constructed under the influence of an international style that had become globally popular. Locale condition of Libyan society, therefore, has been greatly ignored in development the recent cities and towns resulting lacklustre identity. Following sections describe the influence of planning sachem on the current shape of the Misurata.

Like other most cities in Libya including Misurata, the urban environment has been affected by the impacts of uncontrolled and unplanned urbanisation. The public spaces as crucial parts of a city where, social, cultural and economic activities take place have largely disregarded. A little consideration on urban design process has been taken into account, in which are inflexible and prevents the possibility of urban change. It does not take into account the detailed urban plans for the development processes and ways to address emerging problems. Subjects such as walkability, public spaces, activity, vitality and diversity and other characteristics of place have been greatly overlooked within the context of urban design practice.

Another action took place at the early stage of the development and redevelopment processes that have affected the shaping Libyan cities is the invitation of foreign companies with the aim of preparing the initial local planning schemes. Actually, this was due to the limitations of the local competencies and expertise in urban planning and design, in addition to the absence of clear vision as mentioned earlier (Shawesh, 2000). The lack of deeper understanding of the lifestyle, customs, traditions and socio-cultural of Libyan society led a dramatic shift from locality into more modernity (ibid). It also has broken the continuity of the values and the qualities of the past (Abel, 2000). Indeed, over the times in Libya, insufficient attention to the perceived values and qualities associated with place identity had led to lacking the unique character of the place. In

general, therefore, it seems that transformation on built environment through planning and implementation process has led to the lack of identity of most Libyan cities.

The necessity is to ensure that any intervention project will work harmoniously not only in its physical form and structure but also with the embedded locality and socio-cultural patterns. Study on meanings and place attachment allows these issues to be examined and bring to attention.

1955   1960 1972   2014   2014

Transformation of the physical environment from traditional city to modernity.

1966   1975   2014

Transformation on the use of urban space from a space for human activities to a space dominate by car parking.

Figure 5.7: the influence of urban changes on place identity in Misurata. Source: Blake, (1968, pp. 6-7). The author, (2014).

PERIODS

| Before The Muslim Conquest | Islamic Caliphate period (1300-1911) | Colonial Period (1911-1951) | Independence Ear (1951-Present) |

1050   1051-1055   1300   1400   1551   1911   1935   1955   1969   1980   2000   2016

Barber tribe (known as Misurata) was live in this area.

Tribes of Arabic (Bani Hilal& Bani Salim) settled in this area.

Islamic community is established (first mosque and houses).

The growth of trade between Venice and Misurata

Ottoman's ear: houses, administrative building, market places and other facilities established bases in Islamic principles

New faced design of Italian architecture dominated town centre.

Changing in demographics due to the migration of Italians to Libya.

Urban growth increased, oil discovery and new projects begun to appear and first plan for Misurata proposed.

Gaddafi's cup, changing in political and economic system.

Second plan scheme established, decision to reduce the historical buildings in the town centre made by the new government

Uncontrolled plan and weakness of vision in urban design and planning dominated the sense.

Growth in construction accompanied by the dispersion of the identity

PHASE I
The first stage of formulation the city.

PHASE II
The traditional city with micro urban patter and narrowing streets is appeared.

PHASE III
Urban Transformation caused by colonial architecture

PHASE V
Urban growth and changes undergoing with lack of urban planning polices resulting lack of place identity

Figure 5.8: the historical transformation of Misurata. Source: The author, (2015).

5.9   The City Centre of Misurata: the Current Scene

The city centre of Misurata, as described by the local plan report, covers an area of 314 ha and is the regional focal point for a mix of residential, business, public services and Government offices. The topography is quite flat with the sand dunes before the Mediterranean Sea beach adjacent to its northern boundary representing a natural boundary. These topographical surroundings give Misurata unique characteristics. The current city centre of Misurata is located within the Second Ring Road boundary with an area of some 4.5 ha (Robert Matthew and Parthners, 1982).
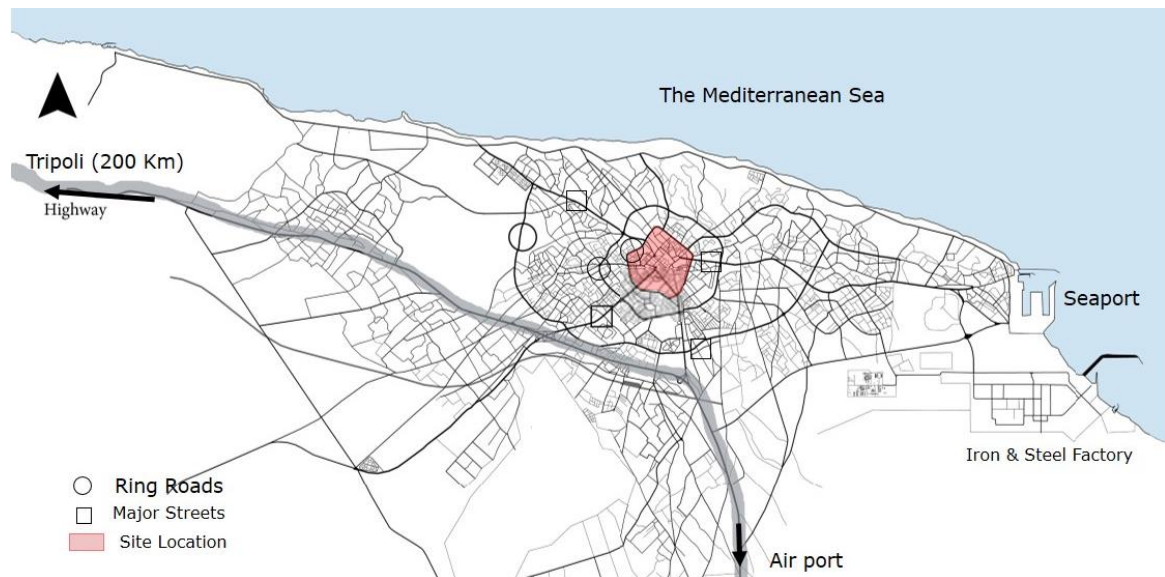
Figure 5.9: the study area in the context of Misurata city. Source: adapted from Elmagalfata (2014, p. 75).

5.10 Land Use

Land use plan as shown in Figure 5.10 indicates that almost all the plots along city centre are used for residential and commercial activities. According to Blake (1968), Misurata is known for its commercial city (market town). The businesses were inherited from their ancestors. According to the Local Plan, the city canter of Misurata predominant by was mixed use of residential commercial and retail (25.1%). Followed by vacant land (19.4%), civic use (14.5%) and commercial (8.2%). There was a total of 2,266 housing units located within the town centre boundary. The current city centre of Misurata is the mixed-use sector with residential areas, commercial, and administrative use. In the last three decades, the city centre has expanded from the First Ring Road towards the Second Ring Road.
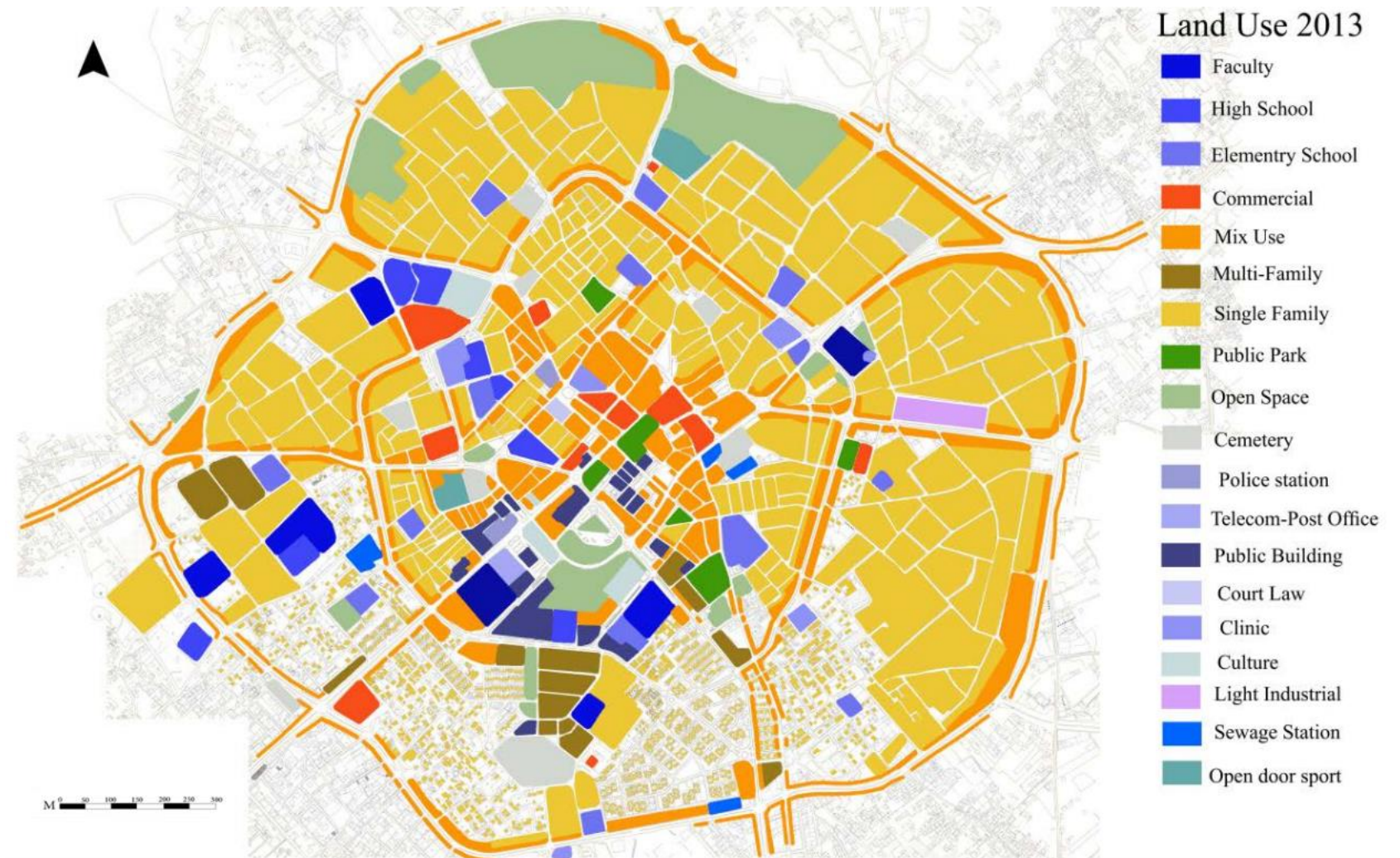
Figure 5.10: Land use plan of the city centre in 2013. Source: Elmagalfata, (2014, p. 70).

5.11 The Physical Characterises

The city centre of Misurata consists two distinct sectors. The Older centre comprises of two story houses and characterised by narrow twisted streets. The urban form of the older centre contents four main elements: 1) the administrative sector, (2) the market (Souk), (3) the mosque that related to religious institutions and (4) the residential and domestic space (Masashi & Miura, 1994). The current large Mosque (Al Alee Mosque, that built instead of the old mosque) is located in the core of the city centre reflects strongly both symbolical meanings and cultural attachment. The historical buildings remaining from the old city, while the rest were demolished are the market of Al Lefah (aged around 100 years), the Historical Castel building (Mutasarifiya), some residential houses nearby Al Nasser Square, and several colonial buildings. The older core or as known by residents (Shara Almal) is among the earliest part in the city centre of Misurata. So far, for the residents, this area is a sign that the hub of the city is based on the spirituality of culture in the Islamic religion.

As it was observed during the field study, this quarter is the area in the city centre that most motivates people to walk and enjoy shopping, owing to the dominance of narrow alleys in its urban pattern. These narrowing alleys prevent cars access makes it more walkable and vital place. During the field study, many participants showed their attraction to this area claiming it to be interesting and reflecting a strong sense of place. As a backdrop from al Nasser square to its north, a variety of stores sit along both sides of the narrow streets and the Sheik Mosque is at the end. Other narrow streets are linked to it providing accessible and comfortable access through the area.

The area generally is bounded by major popular streets such a Sana Street (East), Saadoun Street (South), Jawazat Street and Al Hoot square (West) and Maqawba community (North). The area generally is bounded by major popular streets such a Sana Street (East); Saadoun Street (South), Jawazat Street and Al

Hoot square (West) and Maqawba community (North). This part involves many retail areas such as Medan Al Nasser, Soke Al Zenqw and Soke Al Lefah.

On the other hand, the development of newer part of the city centre took place in the mid of 20th century. At this stage, many modern architectural style inspired by western society have been introduced. The predominant land use of the newer areas is commercial and retail. The public related buildings are the post office, shopping centres, college, Finance Ministry building, police station, residential blocks and administrative complex. Many new retail outlets are located in this area together with the hotels and major private sector office blocks. Many of these shopping units specialise in activities such as private clinics, spare parts shops or household shops and restaurants. Recently, several high-rise structures scattered mostly on the periphery of the enclave acting as hotels, government offices and private sector buildings. Other retail developments have also sprouted along Tripoli Street and Al Hilal Street. These streets are identifiable well known as popular shopping areas with the highest concentration of other public amenities and services.

Tripoli Street is a major road that takes the traveller from the western gate towards the heart of the Central Business District. As it is the major road with a two-way traffic system from the West and South of the country into Misurata, it is among the busiest, with a heavy traffic flow. Benghazi Street is the other major road and it directs the traveller away from the city centre back to the eastern exit out of Misurata towards Benghazi city. Both Tripoli Street and Benghazi Street are recognised because of their consideration as a major traffic flow and because they meet in the core of the city centre at the Flagstad round about. Abdullah Gareibe Street is also very busy, as it is one route into the centre of the town, and has a variety of shops.

The other three major roads such as Sana Street and Baladiyah Street are minor streets carry the traffic within the town centre towards Al Alee Mosque junction and Medan Al Nasser respectively. Al Hilal Street, on the other hand, carries

the traffic within the Second Ring Road towards the other parts with the city centre. Thus, it has quite a heavy volume of traffic, as it is a loop route into the city centre.

There is no a dominant major square in the city centre except for the one along Al Nasser Square. They mostly exist alongside the roads in the form of sidewalks or covered walkways called 'Suge Al Zenque' as seen in the narrow streets of the remaining old quarter of the city centre. The major pedestrian paths observed in the city centre are along Al Hilala Street, Abdullah Greaibe Street and partially Tripoli Street. Hence, the physical qualities that support the walkability and the city centre considers weak and need to be improved.
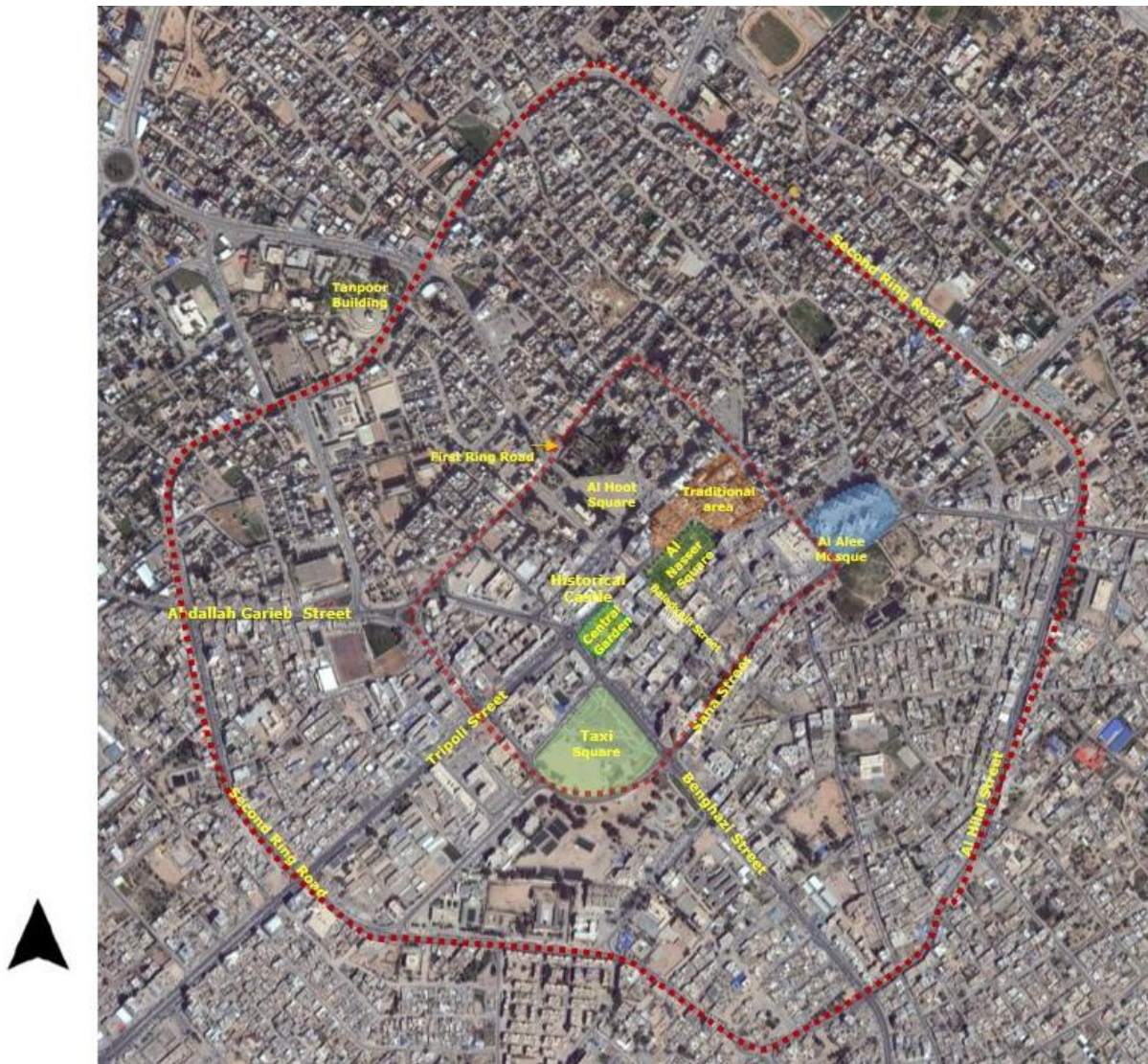
Figure 5.11: The city centre of Misurata. Source: https://www.google.co.uk/maps/place/Misrata,+Libya/, accessed in 22/8/2017.

5.12 Urban Planning Schemes

To date, there is three planning scheme for Misurata produced by prior governments. The first master plan for the Misurata was prepared by Mc G Marshall McMillan and Lucas (an Italian a consulting engineering firm) to covering the period of 1968 to 1988. The main objective of this plan was to confine natural of sources, enhance the infrastructure and study of diversity in land use in order to develop a comprehensive plan until the year (1988) (NCO, 2007). At this stage, indeed, the strategic statement was clearly based on distributing the land use regional planning, rather than basic principles of urban design. They also adopt a model housing unit for quality low-housing in Libyan cities, which caused the standardisation throughout most Libyan cities.

In the 1970s, the second planning sachem covered the period from 1988 to 2000 was introduced by Polservices Company (Polservices is a Polish company invited by the Libyan government to prepare a comprehensive study for Libya's cities). The inspiration was to develop a plan for the province of Tripoli, which includes sub-region of Misurata, which dealt as one comprehensive scheme, and in turn, this subregion was divided into five public schemes (Polservice, 1980). For this purpose, field studies and inventory of the existing land uses were carried out in order to find out the possibilities available, and the problems faced by the city. As a result, the study comes out with two main parts, studying the existing condition and conceptualises different solutions for the land based on the population growth rate by 2000 (Polservice, 1980). At this stage, the subsequent urban network of Misurata was applied and led the city to a more modern infrastructure. The design is based on the linkage of major streets with a ringed pattern (see Figure 5.11).

NEIGHBOURHOOD UNIT	وحدة محلية	WAREHOUSING, DEPOT TECHNICAL YARD
TOWN CENTRE	مركز المدينة	SPORTS AREA
DISTRICT CENTRE	مركز المنطقة	RECREATION BELT AND WATER FRONT
NEIGHBOURHOOD CENTRE	مركز المحلة	WADI AND ISOLATION BELT
TOURIST FACILITY	مرافق سياحية	CEMETERY
PRIMARY AND PREPARATORY SCHOOL	مدرسة أبتدائية وأعدادية	AGRICULTURAL SERVICE
SECONDARY SCHOOL OTHER EDUCATION FACILITY	مدرسة ثانوية ومرافق تعليم أخرى	AGRICULTURAL CULTIVATION
HEALTH SERVICE	خدمات صحية	TRANSPORT FACILITY
CULTURE	ثقافة	SPECIAL AREA
HEAVY INDUSTRY	صناعات ثقيلة	DISTRICT BOUNDARY
LIGHT INDUSTRY	صناعات خفيفة	TOWN BOUNDARY

Figure 5.12: structure plan of Misurata. Source: Polservice (1980, p. 32).

The third generation planning scheme was supposed to start by the year (1996) in order to be ready when the second planning scheme already expired, however, for some political reasons, it was delayed ten years (until 2006). In spite of the absence of third planning schemes, many projects were carried out without taking into account the provisions of the comprehensive plans that was executed in 1979. Indeed, there were a lot of excesses planning standards, systems, planning legislation has caused spread haphazard construction phenomenon, alarming deterioration of the urban fabric in many cases of Libyan cities. Abubrig, (2012, p. 163) described this stage of the urban process as *'buildings erected by members of the public were without planning and were poorly constructed'*. This did not result in the emergence of a vacuum in the continuity of urban development operations

but also befuddled the landscape of the city, in which deform its appearance, as well as pose serious challenges for urban design.

Given these circumstances, i.e. within the chaos and incoherence of the urban spaces and landscapes within the city's existing character that resulted from previous policies and other factors. Indeed, it was a time to reconsider the spatial strategy and the necessity to upgrade the previous planning schemes. Overall, the main threat caused by priors planning scheme is the lack of clear vision to develop and redevelop Libyan cities, including Misurata.

5.13 The Urban Change

At present, as observed in the fieldwork, in light of the absence of effective urban design policy and strategies within the private sectors, there are many issues that have led to the chaos of the city scene and distributed the public realm. For example, the city center of Misurata is facing a massive change as a result of unplanned plots of large-scale commercial buildings, leading to the obstruction of the city skyline. Consequently, there has also been an increase in demand for parking, which was already limited, so there are now more traffic jams. Furthermore, this has had an impact on the activities pattern, and the local community, as many expressed in the interview, has become increasingly aware of the losing of their city's character. Other private projects such as hotels and commercial centers have also sprouted up illegally everywhere in the city center leading to more corrosion of the urban fabric and affecting the place identity.

In general, therefore, it seems that the actions have been taken resulted from the creation of existing issues in place identity in Libyan cities including Misurata, in which increases the gap a huge gap between the physical characteristics and society. Place as already disused in chapter two, has physical and social components that determine its essence and entity, the psychology of place such as meanings and attachment is a result of the interplay between these components and is that in turn create meaningful places as perceived by its inhabits. In this regard, Legg and McFarlane (2008, p. 63) stressed that '*the challenge now falls to local planners*

to adequately solve problems through the formulation of appropriate planning policies based on local conditions and citizens' participation'. Thus, it is aimed that the findings of this study may be of use in any future projects involving the enforced Libran cities' identity as perceived by their citizens.

Further, Gosling and Maitland (1984, p. 225) argues that *'the ability to read his town will lead to the discovery of the town personality: what are its inherent and unique patterns making it different from other places'*. Therefore, it is important to understand how people's perceptions of the identity of the place in which they live and experience on a daily basis, which expresses societal and cultural values rather than only depending on the proposals prepared by designs and planners. The results of this study will be presented in the next chapter, which highlights this concept has any meaning the role of cognition in place and its impact on spatial identity.

5.14 The Study Areas and Selection Criteria

The city centre of Misurata was chosen as the setting for the investigation. The city centre considers as a single case comprises the main shopping streets and other public spaces name as the following:

(a) Tripoli Street
(b) Benghazi Street
(c) Sana Street
(d) Abdu Allah Greaib Street
(e) First Ring Road
(f) Second Ring Road (including Al Hilal Street)
(g) Traditional area
(h) Al Nasser Square
(j) Central Garden
(k) Taxi Square

The city centre is selected based on the physical, functional and social-cultural characteristics that represent the city character. The features of the city centre commonly share the following characteristics:

(a) located within the main commercial/shopping district of the city centre

(b) located within a diverse economic activity (predominantly commercial/shopping area/mixed use development)

(c) identifiable as the main streets and well known as popular shopping areas

(d) receive the highest concentration of visitors

(e) located within a historical quarter where the city began to grow up

(f) the area has been dedicated for an urban revitalisation initiative.

Table 5.2 shows the rationale of the selection of the city centre as a case study for the investigation.

Table 5.2: Rationale of the selection of study areas.

Criteria	Rationale
The location within the core of Misurata.	To analysis the legibility and imageability of current structure of the city centre.
The attributes and characteristics of the physical environment	To analyse the attributes and characteristics of the environment influence residents' perception.
The area is a vital place where trading activities and other daily life occurred	To analysis the degree of engagement and familiarity with places in the city centre.
The selected area has a several historical and traditional significance	To analysis and compare with other features in order to obtain qualities associated with meaning(s).
The area has several places that people commonly visit (e.g. shops, public spaces, café, old market…etc.)	To analyse the form and degree of attachment of the place as held by individuals

Source: The author, (2014).

5.15 Research Design

Research design according to Yin (2009, p. 21) is '*…the logical sequence that connects the empirical data to a study's initial research questions and ultimately, to its conclusion*'. Figure 5.13 illustrates the general picture of the research model, aiming to answer research questions and objectives as unambiguously as possible (Kitchin and Tate, 2013). The previous sections have discussed the knowledge claims and strategy of the study, the following section will provide a deep discussion of the methodology adopted in this research.
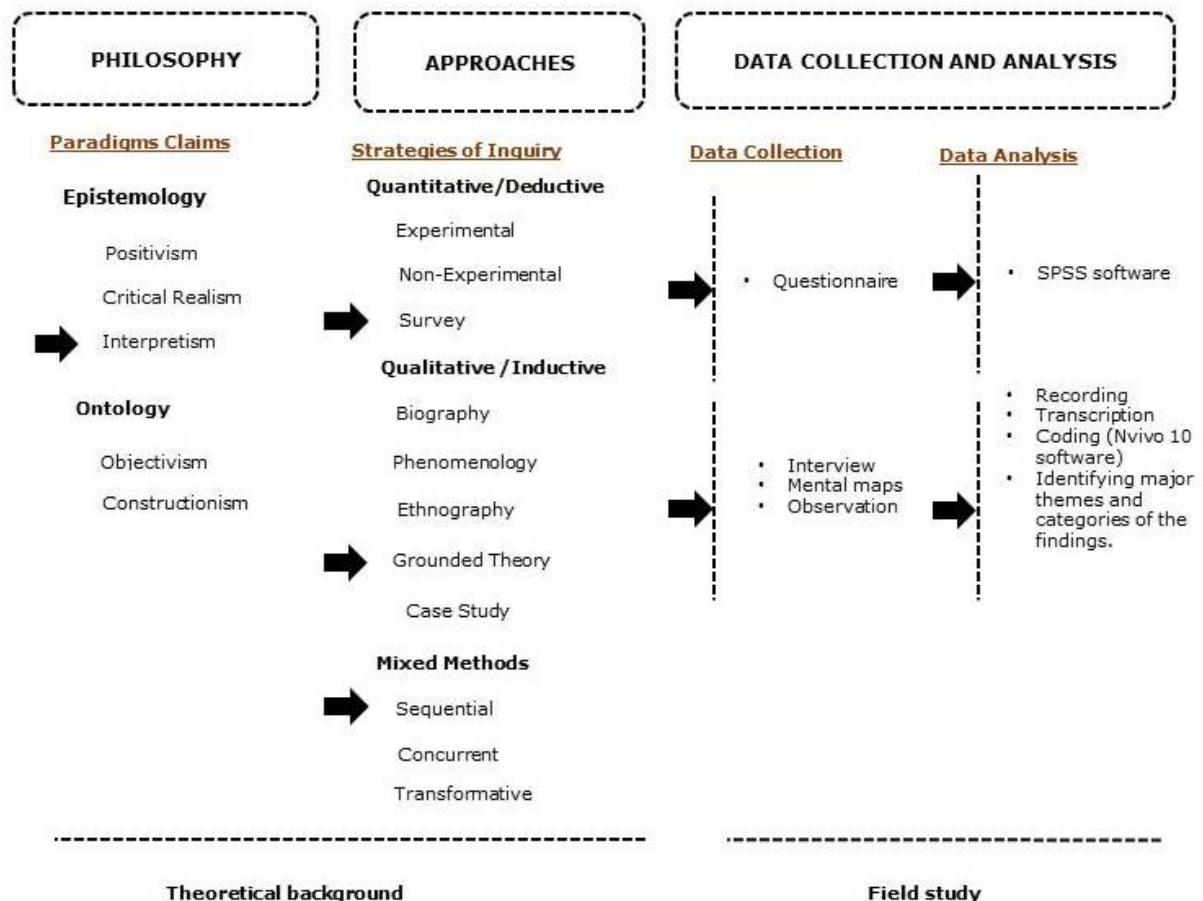
Figure 5.13: Research design strategies adapted from (Miles and Huberman, 2014, Bryman, 2012, Creswell, 2007).

5.16 The Personal Profile of the Respondents

5.16.1 The Questionnaire

A total of 176 respondents were involved in the survey. (55.1%) were males and (44.9%) were females; 90.3% were original residents of Misurata city and the remaining (6.2 %) of other origins but whom have lived in the city for on average between one year (0.6%) and 40 years (5.8%). The majority of the survey respondents were aged between 18-24 and 25-49 years old. The results indicate that the majority of residents surveyed came from the 18-24 age category, while a lesser number came from the 50-64 age category.

Table 5.3: Gender

Gender/ N=176	Frequency	Percentage
Male	55	31.3%
Female	83	47.2%

Source: Survey, (2014).

Table 5.4: Length of Residence

Length of Residence/ n=176	Frequency	Percentage
I was born in Misurata	159	90.3%
More than 35 years	1	0.6%
More than 25 years	2	1.1%
More than 15 years	3	2.8%
More than 10 years	5	2.3%
More than 5 years	3	1.7%
One year	1	0.6%

Source: Survey, (2014).

Table 5.5: Age group

Age / N=176	Frequency	Percentage
18-25	55	31.3%
26-35	83	47.2%
36-45	18	10.2%
46-55	16	9.1%
56-65 and above	4	2.3%

Source: Survey, (2014).

Table 5.6 indicates that a majority (59%) of the respondents had Bachelor or Diploma certificate, while more than (30.7%) of the respondents had a lower educational level i.e. under degree level. The rest (6.8%) of the respondents held the highest level of education e.g., Ms and PhD. As shown in Figure 5.14, more than half of the respondents worked in the government sector and most of them (67.6%) had a variety of qualifications; then there were students (15.9%), self-employed (10.8%), housewives (4%) and the lowest percentage were unemployed people (1.7%).

Table 5.6: Educational background of the respondents

Education / N=176	Frequency	Percentage
Primary school	1	0.6%
Secondary school	54	30.7%
College	11	6.3%
University	98	55.7%
PG – (MSc-PhD)	12	6.8%

Source: Field survey (2014).
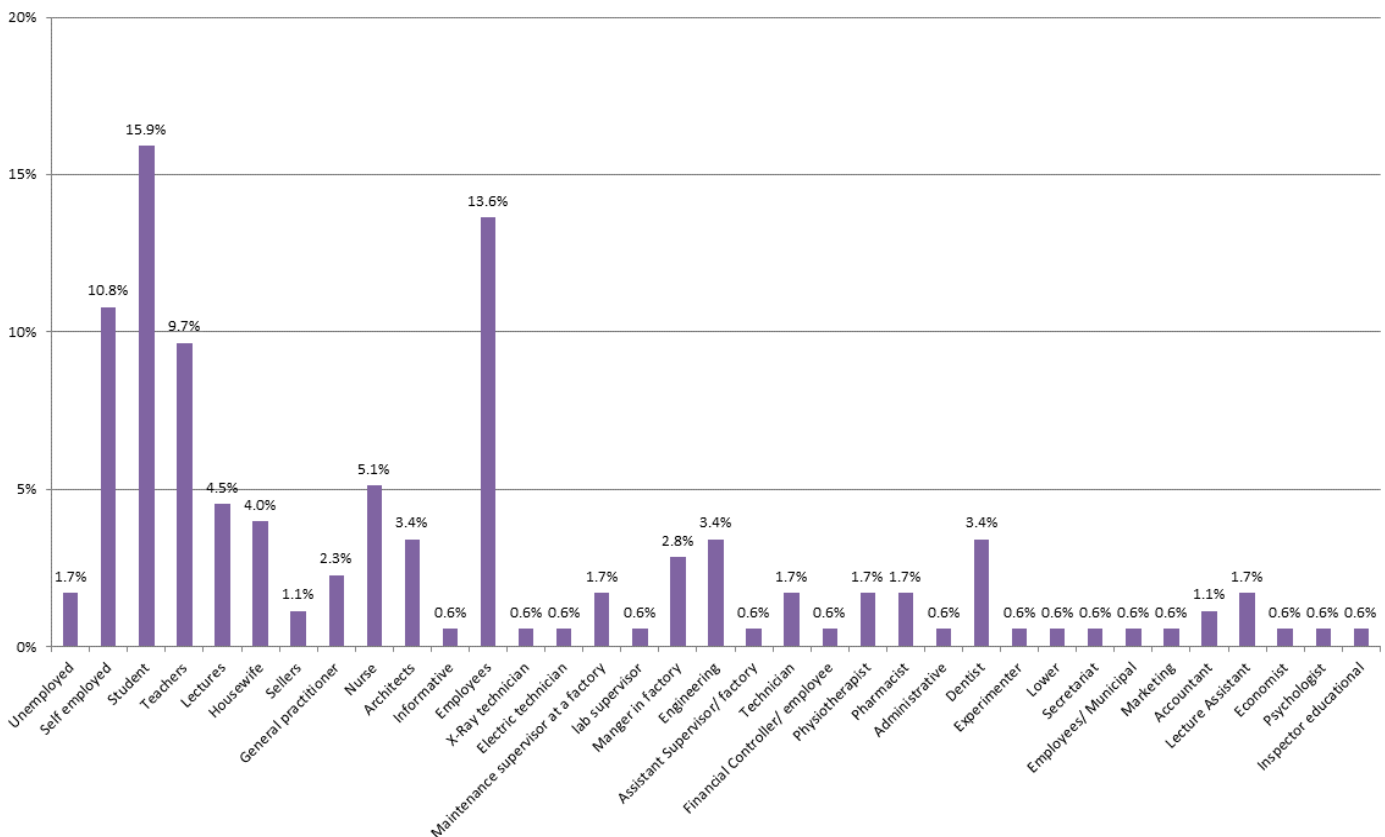
Figure 5.14: Occupation of respondents. Source: Survey, (2014).

The age range of the respondents who participated in the in-depth interviews (N=21) was from 22-56 years old and the majority were aged between 25-40 with a fair distribution of male and female. Apart from some long-term residents, the majority of the respondents were from Misurata and live within its boundaries. Only four participants were long-term residents while the majority were original dwellers. They were teachers, students, shop owners, government employees and office workers.

The respondents represented a cross-section of the dominant ethnic groups occupying the area. It was found that males had most engagement with the shopping district, as it is a key area of economic activity. The respondents engaged with the city centre for diverse types of activities such as working, living, shopping and other social services, and they were varied in their personal and socio-demographic characteristics. Male respondents who engaged with the city centre on a daily basis for shopping and working purposes strongly define the city centre, more so than females who do shop and visit the city centre less frequently. In summary, the respondents in the survey and interviews were predominantly from young and middle age groups with medium educational levels.

5.16.2 The Interview

Twenty-two interviewees successfully were participated in this study. The socio-demography characteristics of the participants are shown the Table 5.7.

Table 5.7: The sample of respondents were interviewed for this study.

Participant	Gender	Age	Occupation	Level of education	Born in Misurata
P1	Male	22	Student	Undergrad	Yes
P2	Male	31	Architect	Post-graduated	No
P3	Male	31	Computer Eng.	College graduated	Yes
P4	Male	28	Architect	University graduated	Yes
P5	Male	33	Employee in Awqaf	University graduated	Yes
P6	Male	56	Artist	Collage	Yes
P7	Male	27	Lecture assistant	University graduated	Yes
P8	Female	46	Teacher/ secondary school	University graduated	Yes
P9	Female	39	Teacher/ secondary school	University graduated	Yes
P10	Female	36	Teacher/ secondary school	University graduated	Yes
P11	Female	29	Pharmacist	University graduated	Yes
P12	Male	26	Medical	University graduated	Yes
P13	Male	20	Radio announcer	Student	Yes
P14	Female	26	Architect	University graduated	Yes
P 15	Female	27	Teaching Assistant	University graduated	Yes
P16	Female	32	Human rights activist	University graduated	No
P17	Female	25	Teaching Assistant	University graduated	Yes
P18	Female	25			
P 19	Male	25	Office Work in private company	University graduated	No
P20	Male	31	Media	University graduated	Yes
P21	Male	50	Self-employed/ trader	Secondary school	Yes
P22	Female	24	Office Work/ private company	University graduated	No

Source: Interviews, (2014).

5.17 Conclusion

This chapter has addressed a brief historical context of Misurata through different times and factors influenced its shape. The urban changes have taken place when the urban growth and economics rapidly increase after independence. The city was inspired by western societies, which applied a new urban planning, land use and large-scale projects. It is evident that the local condition and socio-cultural dimensions were greatly neglected in addition the historical significance of the city during urban development processes. As a result, the urban development process of Misurata among other Libyan cities has failed to project a coherent identity, which is compatible with the socio-physical characteristics of the city. More than four decades ago, when urban growth was beginning to gain pace, it dramatically changed the configuration of most Libyan cities, turning them into cities with unclear identities. Now it is society's turn to shape the city in its own image, to turn it into a better place (Madanipour, 2006).

Therefore, it is hoped this research will contribute to drawing some guidelines that can enhance place identity in the Libyan context by taking Misurata as a case study. How the city centre of Misurata is perceived and felt by its residents in which in turn reflects their identity will be observed in the findings presented in the following chapters.

6 CHAPTER SIX: ELEMENTS AND CHARACTERISTICS OF PLACE THAT EVOKE PEOPLE'S PERCEPTIONS

6.1 Introduction

This chapter focuses on the analysis of data associated with the first research question, which is:

How can places evoke peoples' perceptions?

This question is associated with two objectives:

(a) to identify distinctive features of the physical environment that are associated with place identity; and

(b) to identify place characteristics associated with place identity.

From the data analysis, the attributes that emerged as qualities that helped to determine how the physical environment was distinctive and recognisable were categorised into seven categories, namely: imageability; visual quality; legibility; liveability; diversity; transparency and active frontage; and walkability. Careful discussion and analysis of these attributes can assist the understanding of how places can evoke people's perception.

To triangulate the data, three methods of data collection (survey, interviews and mental maps) are combined together whereby comparisons are concurrently made amongst data to identify patterns, similarities and differences.

6.2 Imageability

The distinctive features of Misurata, from the perceptions of its residents, are identified and evaluated in this section. Two key questions were used to assess respondents' opinions on the city centre's image: firstly, in the survey, respondents were asked to 'list the three first distinctive features that they felt contributed to the identity of Misurata city centre'. The second question posed in the interview was 'what first comes to your mind that symbolises the word Misurata for you?' This was followed by requesting them to give the reasons for their choice of features.

Analysis of the data suggests that there are three main physical components that influence peoples' perceptions: buildings, streets and nodes. The findings regarding these three features will be discussed in the following sections. In this study, the features mentioned most frequently by respondents were selected for the use as distinctive in that evoke peoples' perceptions.

The results from mental maps indicate the total of 32 chief elements as felt by the respondents as recognisable features. Table 6.1 below shows the most recognisable milestones of physical features from the peak the least identified. Initially, three types of maps were produced by the respondents as previously classified by Hussain and Ujang (2014), which are relatively complete maps, serial map and simple map. In contrast, as revealed by this study, the majority of the female respondents drew simple maps. Only three of the respondents drew full maps while five outlined segmented maps and another four formed sequential maps. However, there were a number of drawings that could not be categorised owing to insufficient or vague data in the maps (see Figure 6.1).

Table 6.1: Types of elements drawn in the mental maps of respondents.

	Type	Elements/ places in Misurata city center	Respondents (13)		Notes
			N	Percent	
1	Streets	Tripoli Street	12	92%	Most elements were drawn by most of the respondents were streets (major and minor), nodes such as a roundabout, the road across and meeting points and buildings that were acted as a landmark or have a certain distinctiveness or unique quality was also frequently drawn.
2		Benghazi Street	8	61%	
3		Sana Street	6	46%	
4		Al Sharif Street	5	38%	
5		Second Ring Road	2	15%	
6		Third Ring Road	2	15%	
7		Jawazat Street	2	15%	
8		Abdallah Garieb St	1	7%	
9		Al Hilal Street	1	7%	
10	Buildings	Insurance buildings	9	69%	Other physical structures such as edges and districts were not drawn in mental mapping by the majority of respondents.
11		Castel Building	9	69%	
13		Curt Building	6	46%	
14		Al Moklak Market	6	46%	
15		Baladiyah Building	6	46%	There are some other elements not included here due to the small number of respondents drawing them such as:
16		Mattos Mosque	4	30%	
17		Al Alee Mosque	4	30%	
18		Al Zerai Bank	2	15%	
19		Martyrs Hall	2	15%	
20		Al Sheikh Mosque	2	15%	
21		Traditional Area	2	15%	
22		Investment Market	1	7%	
23		Shopping Center	1	7%	
24		Bilal Mosque	1	7%	• Post office building
25	Nodes	Flag Round About	10	76%	• Central hospital
26		Al Nasar Squarer	6	46%	• Old school
27		Taxi Square	6	46%	• Masa hotel
28		Central Garden	6	46%	• Al Gomohoria bank.
29		Al Hoot Square	4	30%	
30		Al Alee Round About	3	23%	
31		Traffic Lights	2	15%	
32		AL Salam Round About	2	15%	

Source: Mental Map Drawings, (2014).

Respondents: F 12

Respondents: F 8

Respondents: M 3

Respondents: M 9

Respondents: M 12
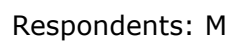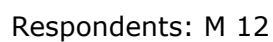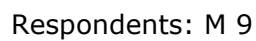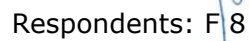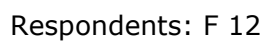
Respondents: M

Figure 6.1: Type of sketch maps drown by respondents. From top to bottom: sample, sequence and full map types. Source: Interviews, (2014).

6.2.1 Landmarks

Table 6.2 summarises the most identifiable buildings in the city centre that were identified by the respondents as landmarks. The highest percentage of responses were given to the Insurance Building (46.9%). Such scores were anticipated due to it being an easily identifiable landmark that is visible as a focal point at the end of Tripoli Street with prominence in scale and height. As expected, Al Alee Mosque was mentioned with the second highest percentage (27.9%) as one of the most memorable buildings. This was followed by the Historic Castle Building, which was scored at (16.3%). Other modern buildings like the Masa Hotel was also commonly mentioned scored at (12.9%) while other historical and religious buildings such as Lefah Market, Al Sheikh Mosque and Seayhi Hotel rated at percentages of (8.2%), (4.8%) and (4.8%) respectively. In addition, Tandoor (6.1%) and Al Moklak Market (3.4%) both received lower percentages although both were commonly mentioned and drawn in the mental maps. Other buildings with lower rates of less than (4%) and were therefore considered as considered insignificant data. The questionnaire results revealed that people appreciate older buildings and innovative modern architecture equally.

Table 6.2: The most frequently recalled buildings in describing the appearance of the city centre.

Landmarks/ Symbols	Res. N=176	Percentage
Insurance Building	69	46.9%
Al Alee Mosque	41	27.9%
The Historic Castel Building	24	16.3%
Massa Hotel	19	12.9%
Finance Building	15	10.2%
Municipality Building	12	8.2%
Al Lefah Market	12	8.2%
Curt Building complex	12	8.2%
Central Hospital	11	7.5%
Meitik Market	11	7.5%
Tanboor	10	6.8%
Port Building	8	5.4%
Seayhi Hotel	7	4.8%
Al Sheikh Mosque	7	4.8%
El Savinah complex	7	4.8%
Sahara Bank	6	4.1%
Watani Bank	5	3.4%
Al Moklak Market	5	3.4%

Source: Survey, (2014).

6.2.1.1 Why are buildings recalled?

Amongst those buildings commonly recalled were historical buildings such as Historic Castle Building, Al Lefah Market, Al Sheikh Mosque and Seayhi Hotel. This suggests that historical knowledge is a key element that influences a respondent's recognition of distinctive features of a place. This result indicates the important insight regarding the conservation of existing historical buildings in the city centre that may have a strong impact on the authenticity of the place. This concurs with Nasar's (1998) views that historical buildings may carry meanings with special labels that may enhance the recognition image of a place.

Other types of buildings were government buildings and amenities such as the Insurance Building, Massa Hotel, Finance Building, Municipality Building, Court Building Complex, Central Hospital, Sahara Bank and Watani Bank. These buildings were indicated because of their functional use and facilities provided. In addition, the location factor plays an important role in the recall of these buildings, with all of them being located within the inner hub of the city centre. Indeed, one respondent stated that:

> '…regarding the landmarks, in my opinion, there are not many salient buildings that may be used as landmarks but I consider the Insurance Building as the most suitable one, because it is located within the hub core of the city centre nearby the old quarter and can be seen from different parts of the city centre' (PM-25 Y-001, In-depth interview, 2014).

The Ring Road zone is considered as the old core of the city centre. The location of elements within an urban context is important for imageability, as it increases the legibility (Alexander, 1979) and the most well-known places are those are visible to the observer (Harrison and Howard, 1972). However, interestingly the Massa Hotel was selected for its aesthetic significance.

Two other buildings were remembered because of their symbolic meanings, namely Tanboor and Al Alee Mosque. Tanpoor Building is the Museum of Misurata and called Tanpoor by residents because of its strange or irregular shape (see Figure 6.4). This building was mentioned by more than half of the respondents in

the interviews as having the most salient elements with the potential of contributing towards Misurata's image. As one of the respondents stated:

> 'Tanboor also can be considered one of the **landmarks** of Misurata because it is the most popular building and well known by all people, even those living outside the city. It is always seen in pictures, TV and other social media' (PM-25 Y-001, In-depth interview, 2014).

In the interview, the Al Alee Mosque was considered as an important landmark that could be used to distinguish the city from other settings. This was because of its morphological significance, which has been known since the earliest historical periods of the city. This was evident in the following statements made by Respondent PM-25 Y-012:

> 'Despite the fact that the current mosque is a replacement of the old mosque, it remains a symbol of the city, which was constructed in the same place, and therefore, this mosque represents the originality of the city' (PM-25 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.2: the old and new of Al Alee Mosque. Source: https://ar.wikipedia.org/wiki/, accessed in 23/5/2017.

Although the current Al Alee Mosque (with a new architectural design) was built on the ruins of the old mosque (the Ottoman mosque), it was mentioned frequently in the survey as one of the most identified landmarks. Indeed, it generates a special recognition from the residents' identification. This suggests that the name is an important factor in generating meanings. According to Rapoport (1977), names have a strong influence on identity in the sense that name changes can lead to a loss of identity. When names and cognitive schemata coincide with their physical

equivalents, the environment becomes particularly clear and forceful. This indicates that the importance of names as representing cognitive schemata may persist even when the original physical equivalents disappear.
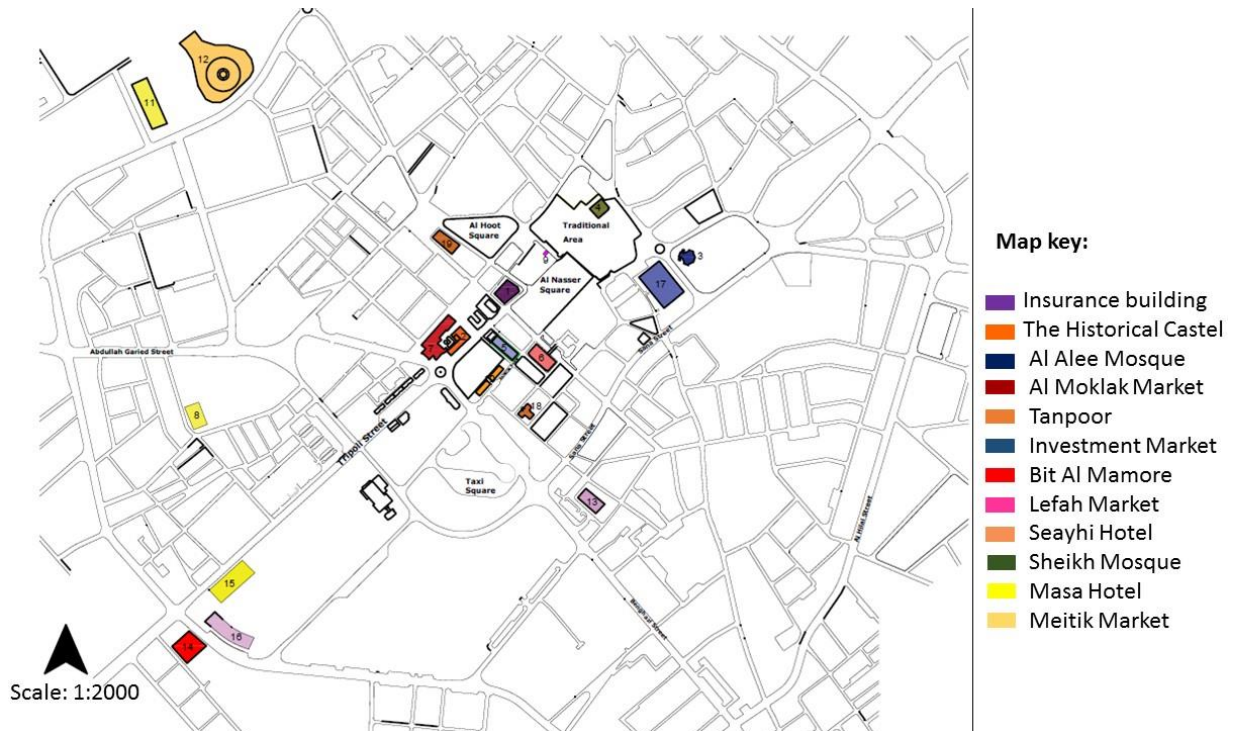
Figure 6.3: Distribution of the landmarks in the city centre based on survey data. Source: The author, (2014).

Imageable buildings: the Port Building, Al Mamore Shopping Centre, the Insurance Building, Al Moklak Market

Imageable buildings: the Curt Building

Meanings: the Seayhi Hotel, Al Sheikh Mosque, Al Alee Mosque, Al Lefah Market

Meanings: the Historical Castle Building, Tanboor Building.

Figure 6.4: Identified urban elements in the city centre according to meaning and legibility recognitions. Source: Observations, (2014).

The overall findings suggest that although there is no one identifiable landmark signifying the city centre of Misurata, buildings have been regarded as influential components in influencing respondents' perceptions. They are considered as significant in creating the essence image of the city in the mind of the residents. One of the most noticeable physical inductors is the location or setting, and this includes salience or visibility and accessibility. Both the Al Alee Mosque and the Insurance Building are in central locations that are accessible to major roads. Both are also located in close proximity to many public services. In this case, the buildings act as landmarks because of their 'imageability' (Lynch, 1960). This

suggests that in parallel to Appleyard's (1969) ideas about the importance of noticeable buildings in perceiving the environmental image, the findings of this research confirm that visibility and accessibility are also important for defining urban places.

In addition, by contrasting between legible features and those with strong meaning it can be found that buildings were recalled not just because their legibility but also because they have meanings to observers. This is evident in recognition of Al Sheikh Mosque and Al Lefah Market, which are both located within the traditional area. In contrast, to Lynch's (1960) theories, which focused on recognised legible features of the environment only i.e. physical aspects that stand out and can easily be seen, this study extends the theory by adding the recognition of meaning.

6.2.2 Streets

In urban design, two types of spaces construct any urban realm, which are streets and squares (Moughtin, 2003). In this regard, the second component of the physical environment that was raised as a key factor playing a role in evoking people's perceptions in this research was streets. The following sections, therefore, discuss how streets, as one of the physical attributes of urban space, influence people's perceptions in the context of Misurata.

Table 6.3 summarises the total of 8 streets that were identified by the respondents in descending order following their experience and knowledge about the city centre. The results show that Tripoli Street achieved the highest score amongst the highest number of respondents (64.2%) in their identification of the streets. The role of Tripoli Street as a major street allows people to travel from the western gate towards the heart of the city centre and as it connects people to other parts of the city and provides a comfortable journey with no traffic jams. This was followed by Abdallah Garieb Street (48.3%), Benghazi Street (38.6%), Sana Street (32.9%) and Al Hilal Street at (28.9%). All these streets are considered major roads and consist of a variety of shops and links to the main roads and other parts of the city.

Table 6.3: Memorable streets based on surveys (n=176).

Elements	Responses (176)	
	N	Percent
Tripoli Street	113	64.2%
Abdullah Garieb Street	85	48.3%
Benghazi Street	68	38.6%
Sana Street	58	32.9%
Al Hilal Street	51	28.9%
Al Edaah Street	26	14.7%
Second Ring Road	4	2.2%
Al Baladiyah Street	3	1.7%

*Based on results of content analysis of two open-ended questions in a perceiving distinctive features questionnaire. Source: (Survey, 2014).

Tripoli Street, Abdullah Garieb Street, Benghazi Street, Sana Street, Al Hilala Street and Al Edaah Street are all main streets of Misurata city centre. Many shops, amenities, restaurants and leisure-related activities are located along and around these streets, as shown in Figure 6.5.

Tripoli Street

Abdullah Garieb Street

Benghazi Street

Sana Street

Al Hilala Street

Al Edaah Street

Figure 6.5: Major streets that influence people's perception. Source: Observations, (2014).

6.2.2.1 Why streets are recalled

Table 6.4 indicates some of the main characteristics of the streets that led them being memorable and recalled. What is interesting about the data in this table is that activities occurred among streets including diversity of activity (51.9%), diversity of building use (27.2%) and shop types (16.7%). These were indicated significantly as the most noticeable features used by respondents to recall streets.

Table 6.4: Why streets are memorable

Variables	Responses (n=176)	Percentages
Activities occurring in this place	84	51.9%
Facades	48	29.6%
Row of interesting buildings	44	27.2%
All shops are here	27	16.7%
Length of the street	27	16.7%
The name of the place	22	13.6%
Facilities provided	11	6.8%
Social events	10	6.2%
Accessibility	8	4.9%
It is a major street	7	4.3%
Not crowded by walkers	6	3.7%
It has beautiful scenery	3	1.9%
Comfortable place	2	1.2%
Total	299	184.7%

Source: surveys, (2014).

Physical appearance appeared to be a less noticeable feature of the streets, however, the street façade was significantly perceived to be important with a score of (29.6%). One interviewee mentioned some important groups of buildings alongside Sana Street, as he said that:

> 'Sana ST is a **beautiful street** because it has a nice façade design with nice interior decoration as well' (PM-25 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

Another respondent indicated that the shape of the street was an important factor that makes it beautiful and provides a sense of enclosure.

> 'I like the way Sana street flows; it is a narrower street compared to the Tripoli Street with a slightly curved shape, which makes it feel like an enclosed space' (PF-24 Y-017, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.6: the Curved shape of Sana Street provides a sense of enclosure and dynamic views. Source: observation, (2014). https://www.google.co.uk/maps/, accessed in 16/ 5/2017.

With regard to tangible characteristics, such as façade and the shape of the streets, indeed, seven respondents mentioned the variety of merchandise i.e. shopping activities and other amenities that exist on streets make them important and vivid in their minds. This is evident as the majority of respondents recalled the Abdallah Garieb Street, Al Hilal Street and Sana Street. The following statements illustrate this point:

'Abdallah Greibe Street is always crowded particularly at Eids, I mean I feel normal, I feel comfortable, particularly at Aids time. The vitality of the street gives a kind of nice atmosphere in this street' (PF-27 Y-015, In-depth interview, 2014).

'Al Hilal Street day by day becomes more popular, as it is considered a vital street and active, and even if you are absent for a while, you will notice some changes. The developments in this street make shops closer to each other and some became better for shopping' (PF-25 Y-018, In-depth interview, 2014).

The overall findings regarding the imageability in the streets show that activities along the streets are the most memorable feature in comparison to the other physical features such as street façade and street shape. The elements that are mostly associated with activity i.e., the key attraction for shopping, the goods and products offered, the physical structures and features and the general atmosphere of the streets. These results seem to be inconsistent with Lynch's (1960) definition of the 'path' as channels along which the traveller potentially moves. This is because streets in Libyan cities, particularly those in the inner city centre, are often characterised as places for shopping as well as for automobile movement (Sahwesh, 2000). Thus, streets are not only physical elements for transport through the city i.e. 'path'; they also include other factors such as the activity among them to significantly contribute to the urban image. Therefore, a richness of street activities can be regarded as important for good quality of imageability.

6.2.3 Nodes

Nodes are strategic spots or intensive foci in a city, which enable observers to realise and act as transit spots for movement from one place to another. Nodes, according to Lynch (1960), can be found, for example, at street junctions and squares and are considered as a focal point for those spaces. Therefore, nodes may be a combination of intersections and focal points, such as transportation breaks in a convergence of paths. Carmona and Tiesdell (2007) went beyond this and defined nodes as spaces that encourage people to stop inhabit and participate within city life.

From the in-depth interview and mental mapping, respondents were able to identify the important key nodes according to their experience and knowledge about the city centre. Results from the interviews and mental maps show that Flag State intersection is the most prominent node in the city centre. This node is the junction of two major streets in the city: Tripoli Street and Benghazi Street. It is important in directing traffic within the city and is located in the heart of centeral area. It is also strategically located close to the core business district and surrounded by a

number of important historic buildings. This junction clearly influences people in forming their image of the city centre as more than half of the respondents emphasised it in their mental map drawings (see examples of mental map drawings in Figure 6.7.

Figure 6.7: Mental maps by Respondent M 04 and Respondent M 09. Source: (Mental Map Drawings, 2014).

This junction has been described by many respondents as the most visible feature in the city centre because of its importance in terms of direction and orientation. It assists people to move from the inner city centre to the other parts of the city smoothly and in easily way. As one respondent pointed out:

> 'When I visit the city centre I often go ahead to this junction and then I direct myself towards places that I want to go, i.e., on the right hand side is the exit to Benghazi Street, left hand side is the Abdallah Garieb and straight ahead the Medan Al Nasser and traditional market. So, it helps for direction and makes it easy to move around' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

In this sense, it seems that intersections of the streets were the most identifiable nodes having an important role in orientation and direction within the traffic system of the city centre. This indicates that transport nodes as a part of

streets network are one of the physical that elements can significantly enhance imageability through an increasing sense of direction.

A part of the importance of this intersection, site observation reveals that the one factor increasing the imageability of the Flag State intersection is having its attractive street frontage and building façades. Near this intersection, a variety of attractive buildings are located such as the Moklak Market, the Historical Castel Building, Central Garden, a variety of coffee shops and restaurants and other entertainment spots, which people use to associate with the place, which People Associate strongly with the place (see Figure 6.8). These all add to the clarity of the street, despite some illegible facades such as the façade of Al Moklak Market, which is mostly covered by illegal signage (see Figure 6.9). These results indicate that legible nodes are not only based on the 'orientation factor' but also consist of the activity spots associated with them. This appears to be inconsistent with Lynch's (1960) definition of nodes as transit spots for movement. Indeed, the design of nodes should also be seen in terms of social life or places where people can express their desirable activities rather than considered as only as places of orientation in terms of traffic flow or movement.

Figure 6.8: Identified node in the city centre according to legibility and activities. Observation, (2014).

Figure 6.9: Façade and frontage activities in front of Al Moklak Market, defining the legibility at Flag Roundabout junction in Tripoli Street. Source: Observation, (2014).

In addition, the field observations also revealed that open spaces such as Al Nasser Square and Al Hoot Square are important nodes of social interaction within the city. Both comprise of a variety of informal activities take place including people walking, sitting, chatting, gathering and people selling things.

Figure 6.10: Al Hoot Square as space for car trades, weekly market (left) and vendors selling at Al Nasser Square. Source: Observation, (2014).

In contrast, the open space in front of the Al Alee Mosque was not strongly identified as a legible node since there is very limited public activity due to traffic congestion together with inadequate public facilities thereby creating an uncomfortable space to use.

Figure 6.11: Al Alee Mosque node shows a lack of environmental comfort due to traffic congestion and inadequate public space facilities such as street furniture, trees and well-paving sidewalk. Source: Observation, (2014).

190

This result suggests that the perceived image of the city is not only based on the physical structure of the place but also takes into consideration activities and functional factors. This means that nodes have the potential to be rehabilitated in order to strengthen place character. This can be done by increasing the characteristics of nodes through enhancing physical features, creating activities and appreciate the historic value. This is consistent with Carmona & Tiesdell's, (2007) definition of nodes. It was found that the unattractive conditions of some existing open spaces such as the space close to Al Alee Mosque are unable to evoke a strong image for the respondents. Considering nodes as public spaces and enhancing the physical features around them and the type of activities they contain will strengthen the image and identity of the city as a whole.

6.3   Form and Visual Quality

The visual quality of the urban environment is primarily assessed through experiencing it. The observable aesthetic appearance of spatial qualities such as colour, texture, scale, shape, building height, decoration, façade design, landscape features (Nasar, 1998), enclosure (Cullen, 1961), activities occurring within and around the urban space (Carmona et al., 2010) have direct reference to imageability and contribute to the sense of place. Nonetheless, multisensory qualities – hearing, smelling and tactility - can often be more important than visual qualities (Carmona et al., 2010; Sepe, 2013).

Based on the data analysis from this research, the form and visual quality theme is discussed in two main categories: tangible features including building façades and the height and scale and proportion of buildings; and intangible features including sounds, smells and activities.

6.3.1 Tangible Characteristics

6.3.1.1 Building Façades

The design of facades along the streets of the city centre is characterised by a modern style with just a few buildings that were built in the late 1970s to reflect the international style. The scene is mostly dominated by the change from a traditional style to a modern façade design. This can be seen in both the construction of the new buildings and, in many cases, the redecoration of existing façades by adding new materials such as glass and aluminium. Some buildings retaining their original façade design include the Historical Castel, the Seayhi Hotel, the Azerai Bank, the Old Hospital, and the Al Lefah Market. However, these important historic buildings are generally in poor condition owing to a lack of conservation practice.

Al Sheikh Mosque   Seayhi Hotel   The Historical Castel   Al Alee Mosque

Al Moklak Market   El Savinah (ship building)   Insurance Building   Bit Al Mamore centre   Massa Hotel

Figure 6.12: The intervention between the old and the modern. Source: Observation, (2014).

In relation to contemporary faced design, the in-depth interviews revealed that there are two perspectives in response to the urban changes and adoption of a modern style. Some respondents commented on their desire to see the original façades retained while other respondents were favourable to the 'modern style'.

Many respondents described the unique buildings in the city centre such as Meitik buildings, Massa Hotel, and Moklak market. The design and style of these buildings were recalled because they were different to the prevailing modern design styles and also the condition of most of the buildings. Two examples provided below illustrate the first perspective towards perceiving modernity as being good in enhancing the image of the city.

> 'Indeed, there are many of the new buildings with the new style of stained glass and facades of modern building materials which impressed me, for example, Massa Hotel, which was recently built, and many people were impressed by this building…' (PF-38 Y-013, In-depth Interviews, 2014).

> 'Misurata is currently undergoing development and many nice buildings have been built recently. I like the architectural style of Meitik building, and it has a nice façade design' (PF-25 Y-015, In-depth Interviews, 2014).

Figure 6.13: Modern facade design on Meitik building (left) and Masa Hotel (right). Source: Observation, (2014).

The other references that were made regarding buildings as landmarks related to their shape. This was particularly evident in recalling the El Savinah Building. This building is located at an important intersection where it can be seen easily by pedestrians. In fact, the name of the building itself is inspired by its shape, which is similar to a ship, and the word El Savinah in the Arabic language means 'the ship'.

Figure 6.14: Al Savinah building. Source: the Author, (2016). Source: Observation, (2014).

Another respondent made a further point when he commented that the newly design façades should respect the original buildings the existed from the earlier period of the formulation of the city. According to him, architects should adopt a design that does not distort or obstruct the facades of historic buildings. The following extract interviews illustrate this statement:

> P: '… currently, the Moklak Market is not fully working in an appropriate way for some reasons, but the design of this building is still considered unique.

> R: Why do you feel so?

> P: … it is modern built within the historical context, which was designed to be the golden market; however, what I like of this building is the way it was designed.

> P: Moreover, for me seriously, I think, the Moklak market was designed carefully in respect to the surrounding environment by adopting some architectural elements such as arches, the simple white colour and height of two storeys. There is also an open market inside the atrium and most importantly, the designer did not distort the surrounding historical buildings, which are located directly next to it and gave it more importance. You can see the historical buildings' main facades still dominate the roadside as well as the height used respecting the historical buildings' (PM-31 Y-002, In-depth Interviews, 2014).

For this respondent, the Moklak Market was unique in terms of its architectural style because of the consideration of the surrounding historical context (see Figure 6.15). This indicates that place identity can be maintained through a careful adjustment between the old and the new.
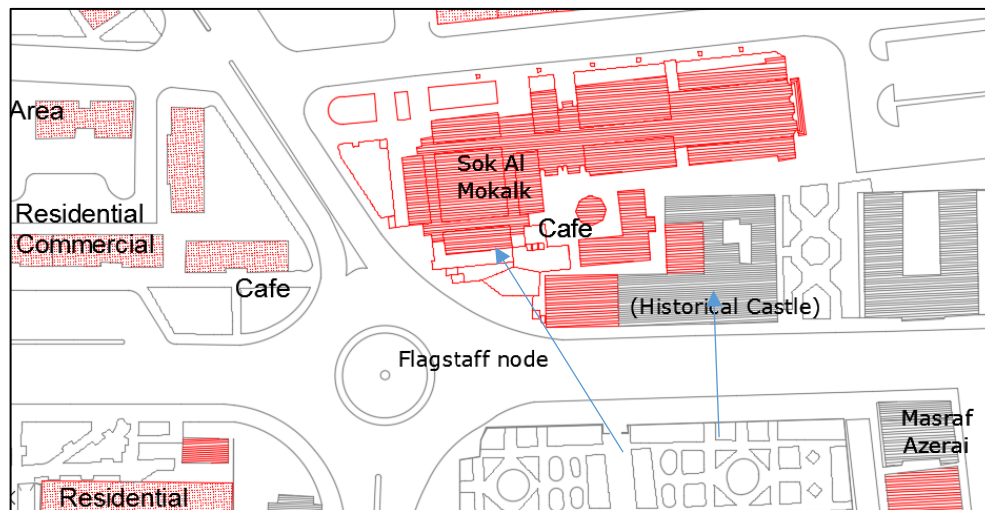
Figure 6.15: Diagram shows the way Moklak and Historical Castle are formed within the urban context. Source: Observation, (2014).

The interview transcripts revealed that the design of the Al Alee Mosque was also found to be unique. Instead of having a form with a dome on top in the middle and one minaret, as is typical of the mosque design in most Libyan towns and cities, the Al Alee Mosque of Misurata was designed with two high and thin minarets constructed from the ground resembling that of the old mosque minaret that was destroyed. These distinctive features were identified by one individual stating that:

> 'I think Al Alee mosque is unique because you cannot find a similar one anywhere built with this shape, and it was designed as an octagon, which reflects the Islamic architecture' (PM-26 Y-012, In-depth Interviews, 2014).

Figure 6.16: Al Alee Mosque. Source: Observation, (2014).

6.3.1.2 Building Height

In recent years, the city centre of Misurata has been undergoing considerable change with uneven building heights and in many cases, illegally constructed structures. According to Robert Matthew and Parthners (1982) urban planning report for Misurata, the height of buildings in the city centre should not exceed six levels, with the exception of the minarets of mosques and some Government buildings such as the Insurance Buildings (See Figure 6.17). At the beginning of the city's formation, most of the buildings were three or four storeys in height, creating a Distance/Height (D/H) ratio of approximately 1:3 which reflected Moughtin (2003, p. 141) observations that '*The ratio of width of street to height of enclosing buildings is critical for good street design'*.
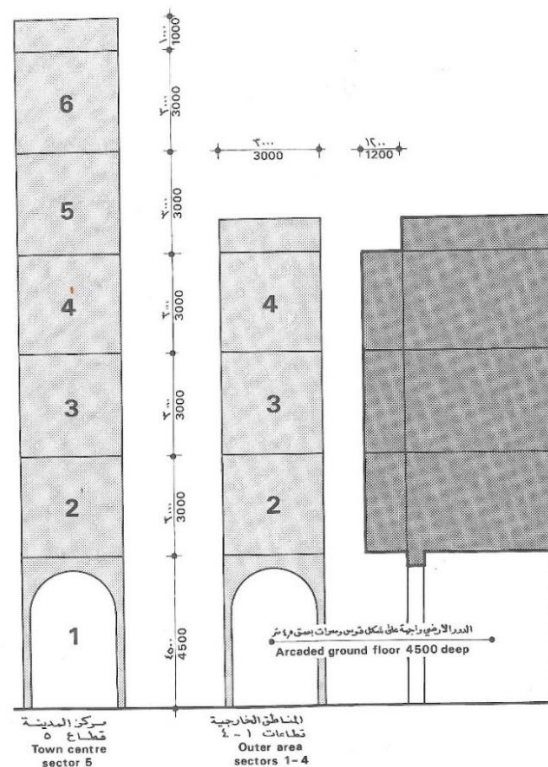
Figure 6.17: The height of buildings in the city centre, as recommended by the planning report. Source: Robert Matthew and Parthners, (1982, p. 70).

Taking Tripoli Street as an example, recently, it is apparent from the field observations that many private sector owners have begun to raise building heights in parallel to the absence of the real state that can perform the planning policy for new projects, as it became one of the most random façades in most streets in the city centre. The site observations also revealed that manipulation of the heights of the buildings has led to inconsistencies with the urban context and this, in turn, had led to an erosion of the urban scene.

From the interviews, on further reflection, some respondents stressed that the inappropriate heights of some new buildings did not fit with the current context and tended to have a negative impact on the city centre's image and identity. They felt that the absence of design criteria to guide the development process has inevitably to erratic construction resulting in a negative impact on the visual image of the city centre. One typical respondent state that:

'Well, it is clear that there are many large scale buildings that have been built recently in the city centre, and yet the Insurance Building still dominates because of its height and setting in Tripoli Street' (PM-56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

These results suggest that even average height tall buildings, such as that recently built among Tripoli Street (see Figure 6.17), were noticeable because of the contrasting impact the building has on the surrounding urban context. This implies that appropriate building height within streetscape is important in enhancing the visual qualities and designing attractive streets.

Figure 6.18: New building under construction that contrasts with the height of its surroundings. Source: Observation, (2014).

6.3.1.3 Sense of Enclosure

In many cases, the narrow street evoked people feelings in contrast to the vast boulevard of the rest of Tripoli Street. This suggests that the sense of enclosure is the quality of place that contributes to and fosters place identity, as perceived by residents. According to Cullen (1961, p. 29), *'enclosure, or the outdoor room, is, perhaps, the most powerful, the most obvious, of all the devices to instil a sense of position, of identity with the surroundings ... it embodies the idea of hereness ... '.* Moughtin (2003) also reported that a street as an urban place must possess the

qualities of the enclosure. The sense of enclosure was indicated in the interviews as a quality that contributed to the positive perception of a place. This is evident in the descriptions of Baladiyah Street by several respondents who described it as a unique place because of its ratio and the surrounding buildings. For example, Respondent 10 stated that:

> 'I consider Baladiyah Street to belong to one of a unique streets in the city centre because it still has certain important features that you will never find anywhere else. It is a short one-way street, which makes it a quiet place. It has a beautiful façade in the style of the colonial buildings and the way the buildings are lined up with nice width and height provide a comfortable feeling' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.19: Scene rated high on enclosure and linkage, Baladiyah Street. Source: Observation, (2014).

Another example supporting this statement is illustrated by Tripoli Street. Tripoli Street is the longest street in the city and has a different shape and size. Furthermore, Tripoli Street is characterised by a non-fixed width as the area between Flagstone Roundabout and the Insurance Building is narrower than the rest of the street and this area of it provides a more friendly space surrounded by several historical buildings. This part has been regarded as a unique space in the Tripoli Street due to the provision of a sense of enclosure resulting from the street ratio. This was reflected by the one participants' comments when he describes Tripoli Street:

'I really love the area between the Insurance Building and the Flag State Roundabout where the street becomes narrower and there is less high speed car traffic. I do not know exactly why, but I think because this part has a nice order and is more friendly as the buildings are much closer and have a nice façade' (PM-25 Y-017, In-depth interview, 2014).

In both of the above cases, the perceived scale and ratio of some streets and buildings are considered by various respondents as positive attributes that contribute to the place identity, through the creation of a sense of enclosure. The type of street network can also influence the sense of enclosure. For instance, a short and one-way street bounded by appropriate building ratios to the width of the street can help to enhance some streets as social spaces. These may undermine the sense of enclosure created by the building setbacks from the street and the trees that line on it. This finding is in agreement with Alexander et al. (1977) and also accords with the findings by Stamps III and Smith (2002). They used photographs of Paris in their study on the environmental enclosure in urban settings, which found the proportion of a street that facilitates movement and thereby increases the perception of the enclosure.

The data from this research shows that respondents were able to express the sense of scale and proportion of street as a characteristic that contributes to place identity. It is quite apparent that sense of enclosure was recognised as noteworthy by the majority of respondents. In turn, factors such the size, proportion and height of buildings that shape the space become important in their recognitions of places and that this influenced their feelings and well-being in a space. These results support previous which links the scale and proportion of a space and sense of enclosure (Norberg Schulz, 1976; Jacobs, 1993; Moughtin, 2003). In line with Moughtin (2003) and Smith's (2013) suggestions, the results demonstrate that people evoke different feelings in response to different types of spaces such as the contrast of appropriate scale and height of streets to the vast boulevards or inappropriate ratio in space design.

With the absence of local authority regulations, the overall building heights among the city centre of Misurata currently face a dramatic change in conjunction little control over façade design, including the architectural details, material, colour,

building height etc. Thus, nowadays, the architecture style of the city centre is dominated by a deteriorating quality of façades on its buildings. Indeed, façade design in the city centre is dominated by incompatible designs with many illegally added floors on top of the existing structure. This phenomenon can be found everywhere in the city centre including the historic core which has significantly altered the urban fabric. Motives behind this transformation can be related to insensitive speculative development and inflated land values within the inner city centre.

6.3.2 Intangible Characteristics

Although places are primarily a three-dimensional design, it is also important to consider the non-visual aspects of the environment. Indeed, smells, sounds, touch, and feelings all contribute significantly to the character of a place (Sepe, 2013). In this study of Misurata, it was found that sound and smell tended to be more noticeable features.

In the interviews, in order to obtain a deeper understanding of the effect of places on people's perception, respondents were asked to imagine that they were taken inside the city centre for a blindfolded tour. In this case, they were asked if they could identify where they were in the city centre and how they identified this. The results demonstrate that people are able to identify the traditional areas easily through evoking their senses of senses of hearing, smell and air. As one interviewee put it:

> 'In fact, it was difficult to recognise myself when my eyes were covered, as I could hear the cars everywhere, and the same sounds you could always hear in the streets. But in the traditional area, I could easily recognise through many aspects. Firstly, the vehicle sounds had suddenly disappeared, it was quiet and I could hear people chatting, and smell the smells from the clothes and leather shoes and bags. The kinds of movements gave signs. The bakery on the corner of the road that links Al Nasser Square and Al Sheikh Mosque provided a unique smell, which would never be found elsewhere. They make a special bread there with mixed dates so the smell is clearly identifiable. Then, I turned left to hear the very old man who was opening his tailor shop. The movements, narrow roads, textures, and even the air there was different' (PF-36 Y-010, In-depth interview, 2014).

Respondents showed high levels of sense of place in the traditional area, which enabled them to evoke their senses such as smelling and hearing as this place was isolated from car movements and only used by walkers. During the field observation, walkable places provided a strong sense of community while engagement with place was very limited and only associated with Al Nasser Square, Al Lefah Market and traditional areas. Such places had the ability to stimulate people's senses and strengthen the sense of place because of the pleasant environment away from car noise, which supported the social interaction. These findings suggest that the intangible features of place that associated with one's experience of a place are important and have a significant contribution in designing places. Therefore, urban designer and architects intangible values such as feelings, sounds, smells and others should be integrated into urban design process (el-Dien Ouf, 2008).

6.4 Legibility

Legibility relates to the ease with which people can orient and find their way around an environment, which in turn can increase their enjoyment of a city. According to Lynch (1960, pp. 2-3), legibility is *'the facility with which the parts can be recognised and organised in a coherent structure'*. This suggests the importance of legibility to urban design and planning. The legibility of a place can be improved by a street or pedestrian network that provides travellers with a sense of orientation and relative location and by physical elements that serve as reference points (Bentley et al., 1985).

In this research, legibility is also found to be an important quality associated with place identity, because as it refers to distinctive, recognisable, and memorable features of urban places (Ewing et al., 2006, p. 6). Indeed, legibility is related to perception in the way in which places are mentally recognised by residents as a clear pattern (see also Lay and Reis, 1994, p. 92). The quality of legibility was found to be one important factor that influenced respondents' perceptions of the city centre of Misurata. The best legibility in the city centre was found to be in Tripoli

Street. The following sections will discuss the findings regarding the theme of legibility.

6.4.1 Legibility on Tripoli Street

The legibility indicators of Tripoli Street are shown in Figure 6.20. This street is considered one of the most accessible streets and has many advantages which make it the most legible and readable place in the city centre. Entering the street space creates a sense that you are in the city centre as expressed by respondents:

> 'Being in Tripoli Street means that you are in the city centre. If you want to describe the city centre for a stranger, you would start from this street, which is the main street that leads to other parts of the city centre. It is the direct one to all hubs, and if you continue driving it will lead you to the Insurance Building after crossing the Flagstad Roundabout; simply if you turn right, you will see Baladiyah Street and Median Al Nasser. I think that it is easy for even strangers to find their way as many well-known buildings are located along this street' (PF-27 Y-015, interview, 2014).

The buildings along Tripoli Street are also varied in style and use. From the very traditional style of the Ottoman architecture at the beginning of the street to new four-story buildings with contemporary architectural style, as one approaching the Second Ring Road zone. At the right side, there is also an old building with a colonial style. Four residential blocks with modem façade design with commercial use on the ground floor dominate the view of the streetscape between the Flag State Roundabout intersection and Al Quwairi intersection. New taller buildings have been built recently after the third intersection of Tripoli Street and the Second Ring Road.

Syahi Hotel (colonial building)

Insurance Building acting as endpoint

Traditional area

Al Nasser Square

Flag state intersection

Al Moklak Market

Entertainment

Cafe

Cinema

Restaurants

Insurance Building.

Frontage activity

Al Quwairi intersection

Meitik Market

Café sitting Flag state intersection.

Administrative building (colonial design)

Scale: 1:1000

Sport supermarket with new redecorated façade at Al Quwairi intersection.

Meitik Market (modern design)

Restaurant on Tripoli Street where food smells can be found and people stop for takeaway orders.

Administrative building (Ottoman design)

Figure 6.20: Legibility in Tripoli Street. Source: Observations, (2014).

A clear node is seen at the Tripoli Street intersection of Flag State Roundabout, making the street and its surroundings more legible and assisting orientation and traffic flow. Buildings near to this intersection, such as the Al Moklak Market and other shops and cafes, have active frontages at the front and rear, providing an attractive street frontage and encouraging pedestrians to pause. Near this intersection, sellers offer their goods in front of their shops, which also increase the vitality of the place. The traffic crossing this intersection is heavy, as it leads to other parts of the inner city centre. All these factors contribute in making this intersection the most identifiable as a node as confirmed by all the data collection methods, as stated in section 6.2.

Another aspect of this street that contributes to its legibility as the range of restaurants located along both sides, particularly between Flag State intersection and the Al Quwairi intersection. People at night queue for their orders and there is a distinct smell of the food stalls that help to make this nodal point more 'imageable'. At the Al Quwairi intersection, there are many shops and supermarkets with modern façades such as Bit Al Mamore, which contribute to its legibility as well as creating an interactive place. Tripoli Street is considered legible because it has many popular buildings and also because there is a variety of attractive entrainment spots connected with them.

6.4.2 Boundary

Boundaries are important for perceptual images. As Tiesdell, et al. (1996) suggested boundaries physically designate a cultural quarter. In Misurata city centre, the boundaries are not clearly defined meaning it is hard to identify the quarters and districts of the city centre. For example, the boundary of the First Ring Road is 'fuzzy' with unclear edges in terms of land use. It was hard for the respondents to define the boundary of the districts in the city centre, which is not the case to Milgram (1976) study on the legibility of Paris city. One female respondent stressed that:

'I really cannot identify the boundary of the city centre. I know where
the second ring road started but where exactly it ended, I am not quite
sure. In this regard, the first ring road has completely unclear
boundaries' (PM-36 Y-010, In-depth interview, 2014).

Analysis of the data from the interviews revealed that many of the
respondents had difficulty identifying the boundaries of the First Ring Road,
unlike the Second Ring Road, which was clearly defined. However, the
perceptual drawings reveal that the majority of the respondents' have a
tendency to specify the memorable buildings within in the area situated within
the First Ring Road zone (see Figure 6.21). This result is in agreement with the
survey data.
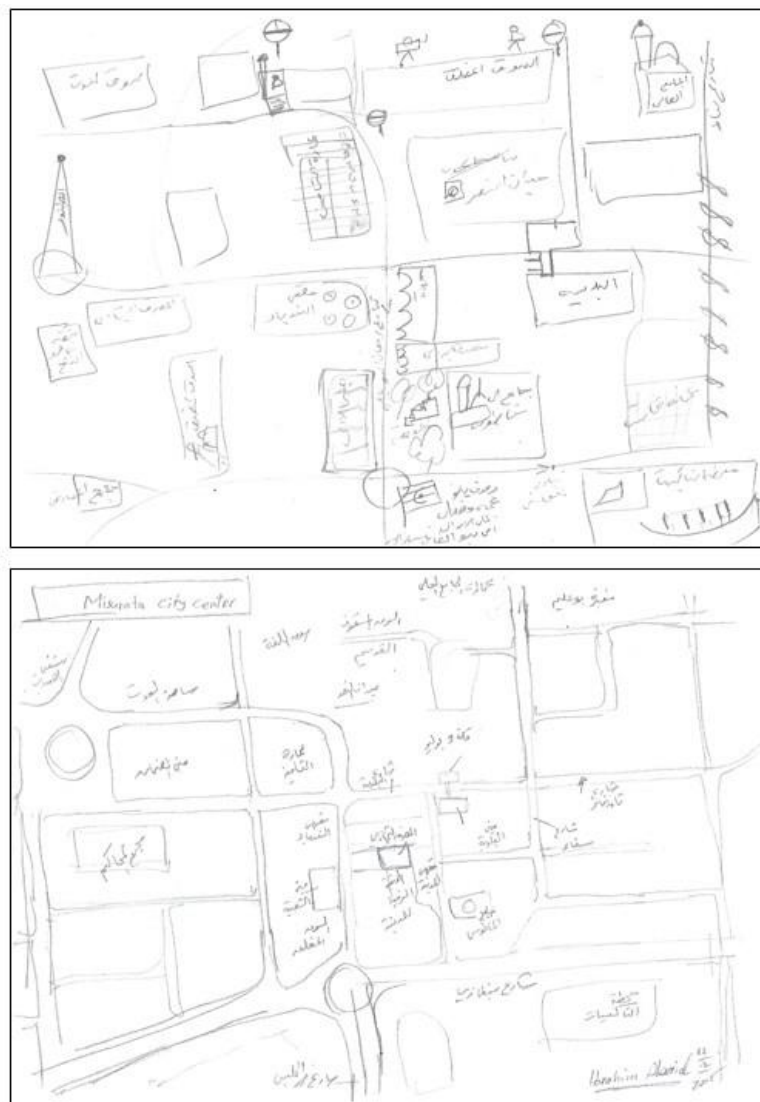
Figure 6.21: Examples of mental maps produced by respondents M 11 and M 12 show that
most buildings drawn were located within the First Ring Road with a defined boundary.
Source: Mental Maps Drawing, (2014).

Indeed, this area within the First Ring Road was considered the core attraction area for Misurata as it reflects the old part. It should be noted, however, that the study area encompasses the entire vicinity of the Second Ring Road of the city centre. This is due to the area of the First Ring Road is being considered a transitional area between the old part and the most modern shops and streets that are located in the Second Ring Road zone. The data also suggests that this popular zone is far more substantial and more fascinating for the residents of Misurata to relate to and it, therefore, figures strongly in their mental images.

6.4.3 The Importance of Location in the Context

Being in the city centre and in proximity to important accessible places or vital areas has the greatest impact on respondents' perceptions to be commonly recalled as salient features. It was found that all of the buildings that were indicated as having the features associated with the character of Misurata were a strategically located within the inner of the city centre where the bossiness hub is occurred (see

Figure 6.3). For example, all the research participants highlighted that the Insurance Building, the supermarket of Bit Al Mamore, the Meitik Building and the Investment Market was very central and they are in close proximity to accessible vital spots or axial roads. Essentially, amongst other features, being in this central location made it easier and quicker for respondents to notice and recall:

> 'I mentioned Al Alee Mosque as a unique building because it is located in an important area where many shops and offices are located…' (PF-29 Y-011, In-depth interview, 2014).

Apart from describing the location of the distinctive features, the context surrounding them - road intersections, traffic lights, traditional area - are also elements used to recognise the image of the city. This implies that salience and visibility to residents were important as recognisable features. Indeed, some key elements were recognised by some respondents, and particularly

those that had little experience with the city centre, through location instead of their official or local names. For example, one female interviewee in identifying Tripoli Street said that:

> 'To be honest, I cannot identify the existing boundary of the city centre, even sometimes I do not know the street's name, but I use some clues to identify the place. For example, realising Al Bit Al Mamore building gives an indication that I am in Tripoli Street' (PM-36 Y-010, In-depth interview, 2014).

For this respondent, the existence of certain buildings and their location within a street helped its identification. These results confirm that salience of the urban environment is closely reflected in the residents' ability to identify locations and elements associated with them.

This all relates to locational knowledge, which means to know where a place is, and visual recognition, which relates to the ability to recognise a place and interacting with the place ensures that a physical element is noticed and remembered (Appleyard, 1969). Also, the most well-known places are those that are imageable and visible to the observer (Harrison and Howard, 1980). The buildings located on Benghazi Street and Tripoli Street were commonly indicated in respondents' descriptions, drawings, and questionnaire responses because of the immediacy of their location to viewing and as they are often seen by the traveller and owing to the immediacy of their location to the viewing and circulation system of the city center.

Due to the significance of the location of the physical elements, they become noticeable and easy to recall. The location factor, therefore, plays an important role in legibility. This leads to the conclusion that the location or setting of the physical features within a city centre is substantial in creating the basic structure and therefore acts as a reference point that reinforces the degree of legibility of the city in the mind of the residents. This also implies that the location of the physical elements in relation to the urban context and fabric creates a distinctive feature of these elements, which in turn increases the clarity of the city centre. This is in accordance with Hasanudin (2003) findings that location was the most cited attribute for landmarks in Kuala

Lumpur and supported by Dolbani (2000) who found that location was one of the main concerns in creating responsive public open spaces for Kuala Lumpur.

6.4.4 The Simplicity of Layout Pattern

The research findings indicate that certain aspects of layout pattern contribute to perceiving urban environments as distinctive features by the increasing chance encounters, orientation and clarity. The respondents also highlighted the importance of short cuts and density on walkability. The mapping exercise and data from the interview confirmed these findings as the ring and radial roads commonly drawn in the mental maps and also the most of enjoyable walking places found to be that cluster around the narrow alleys and one-ways roads.

6.4.4.1   Circular Urban Pattern

The results of this research demonstrate that the structure and plan of the city centre are strongly regarded as an influential factor on the residents' perceptions and cognition of the city centre. This section will discuss the characteristics associated with city's structure and experience. Notably, the city centre of Misurata is surrounded by urban hub characterised by four ring roads e.g. Sana Street and radial roads e.g., Tripoli Street, Benghazi Street. These boundaries create the feeling of being in the inner city centre because of the street pattern and also its perceptual boundaries:

> 'In recent years, the city centre has been expanded from the First Ring Road boundary to reach the Second Ring Road boundary. I think the city centre now is the whole area within the Second Ring Road zone, which involves a variety of shops, malls, crowded by people and traffic movement' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

Misurata city, unlike the rest of the Libyan cities, is characterised by a circular and radial road system that contributes to its coherent structure. The circular urban pattern with radial intersections is commonly mentioned as a

positive attitude in terms of accessibility and flow by giving options direction and legibility. This was highlighted by four interviewees and also in the cognitive maps exercise. A resident who has been living in the city centre since birth stressed the importance of the ring road pattern of Misurata:

'…I think what is distinct in Misurata city compared with other Libyan cities is in terms of the type of buildings that have been built, but more importantly the way its plan has been structured. This includes the width of its streets and the ring roads, and I consider these elements to be very important for redeveloping and reshaping the city centre in a more proper and attractive way in the future because it provides a kind of flexibility ' (PM- 56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

Respondents felt that the simplicity and clarity of street pattern and structure was one of the prominent features, which can clearly be seen as contributing to the character of the city centre. It affects how users can understand what opportunities a place can offer and help them to form a clear and accurate image of a place (Dolbani, 2000). The circular circulation form of Misurata facilities movement and way-finding and this is supported by the linked street pattern:

'I can say that the most distinctive thing of the city centre of Misurata is its accessibility, making it easy to move from one part to another. I like the way major streets are connected and lead to the centre easily and clearly'(PF- 25 Y-017, In-depth interview, 2014).

The figures below, which are the cognitive maps of the investigation respondents, highlight the distinctiveness of circular street pattern (Figure 6.22).
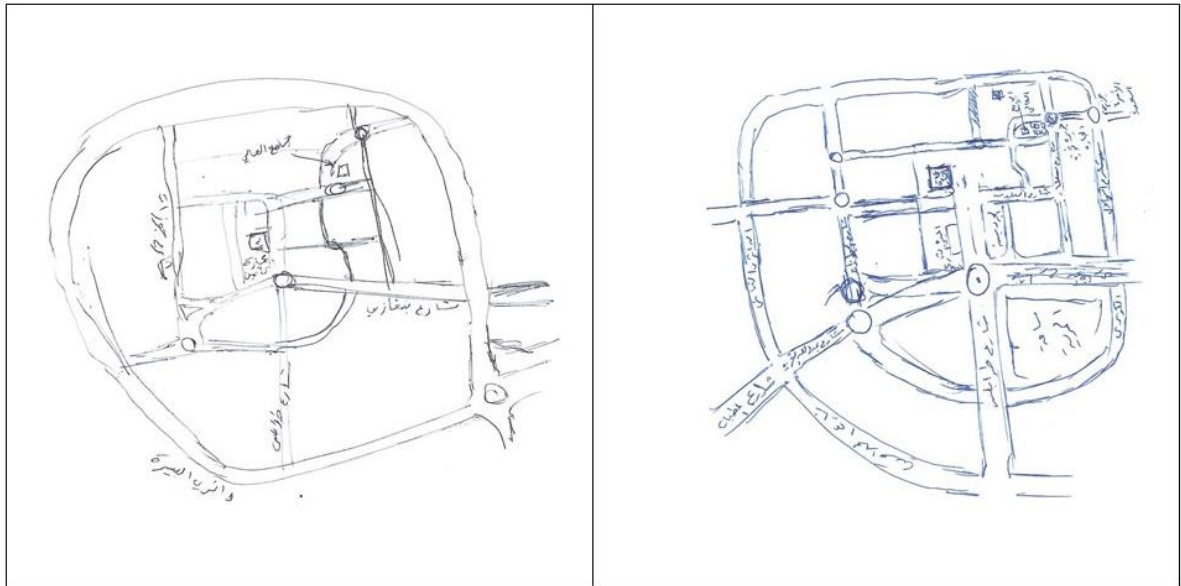
Figure 6.22: Cognitive maps: Boundaries of the city centre and Grid Pattern. Source: Mental Maps Drawings, (2014).

It was found that six respondents drew one-way roads in their cognitive maps, including streets such as Al Sharif Street, Jawazat Street, Baladiyah Street and Al Moklak Street. These streets were particularly memorable because they are low speed and short roads that facilitate the accessibility in the inner area of the city centre. One respondent said:

'I found these roads, I mean one-way roads, more comfortable and easy to pass through' (PF- 31 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.23: Examples of one-way streets mentioned by respondents. Source: observation, (2014).

It is also important to move inside the city centre in an easy and clear way without obstacles. The simplicity of traffic and access to a place or a building is very important to reduce the stress resulting from traffic congestion. The visibility and accessibility were found to be good in enhancing the place image with one respondent identifying that:

> 'I consider the main streets are an important characteristic of the city centre. They are accessible and linked smoothly with other parts and directly facilitate the movement within the city in a proper way, making it easy to travel in the city centre' (PM-31 Y-002, in-depth interview, 2014).

6.4.4.2 Permeability Allowing Walkability

The internal urban fabric of Misurata has a grid urban pattern with many substitutional routes that offer mobility choices through the different urban elements with short cuts such as minuscule alleyways, one-way roads, linkages and narrow lanes. The urban short cuts within the inner city centre that reduce car movement are perceived as a positive factor that improves walkability. Data from the questionnaire survey and the interviews showed that the one-way traffic system was repeatedly mentioned by respondents as a unique aspect associated with Misurata's character because they make it easy to walk through the city centre and this increased the possibility of chance encounters with friends:

> '…For me, the Mattos Street is the nicest one, really it is a beautiful street because it is a one-way road and a quiet and safe road, which has a low-speed flow' (MP-31-003, in-depth interview).

A sketch illustrating the permeability of the inner city centre is shown in Figure 6.24. In addition, as people can easily walk through, this also increases the enjoyment within the place:

> 'In evening times, I often park my car nearby Brasilia café and I start walking around, walking to the car market in Al Hoot square or walking towards Al Matos Mosques or Al Forsan cafe and so on. I love to walk through these narrow routes because there are fewer cars making them enjoyable places' (MP-31-020, in-depth interview).

Figure 6.24 Permeability of city centre and optional movement routes. Source: observations, (2014).

Permeability is strictly about the ability to easily get to and move through a place, thus providing ease of movement. Permeable places offer choices of access points for people to go to a particular destination. This quality dictates the value of the street, particularly with significance to strengthening walkability and supporting the social interaction within places.

6.5 Liveability

Liveability of urban space was found to be one of the place characteristics that highly contributed to the urban image. Liveability refers to where people express preferences for qualities associated with physical settings such as streets with comfortable pavements, attractive outdoor spaces, and places to walk and to interact (Mahmoudi et al., 2015). Liveability in the case of Misurata is discussed under three main themes: quality of physical features; traffic congestion; and covered spaces.

6.5.1 Quality of Physical Features

Elements such as street furniture, trees, appropriate paving, walkways, sitting areas, covered walkways and other elements of the urban spaces are regarded as important characteristics in retaining people in urban spaces and supporting those spaces and thereby facilitating liveability (Mahmoudi et al., 2015). All these features were strikingly absent throughout most parts of Misurata city center. In a hot and humid setting such as Misurata, the lack of existing physical qualities, such as attractive landscape features and shaded paving for pedestrians has a greater influence on residents' motivations to engage with urban spaces. This was noted by many respondents:

> 'I believe that if there are shaded paths, trees, other attractive landscape features such as fountains and so on, **I and everyone would love to walk** through the city. For me, the thing or aspect that could most attract me is water and greenness and shaded places and settings, which would make the public places user-friendly' (MF- Y 32-016).

Another respondent mentions the importance of enhancing the quality of a place, particularly for disabled people when he comments that:

> 'I think it important for designers to look at the disabled people when they develop or redevelop the city centre. If you look at the current condition, there are no considerations within the city's public space for these groups of people, meaning there are **no ramps** in front of building entrances, or **car parks**, **no lifts**, and the **paving** is not suitable for pedestrians using wheels' (PM- Y 20-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

The site observations also showed that there was an inadequate amount of physical features in the city centre as regards comfortable sidewalks, which could encourage people to walk more frequently. Street furniture such as benches, waste bins, shaded spaces, grass, plants, and others were absent in most of the city centre streets and squares, resulting in a lower level of liveability. Carmona et al. (2010, p. 196) stressed that *'the organisation and distribution of street furniture/amenities is a prime indicator of the quality of an urban space and can also establish quality standards and expectations for subsequent development'.*

Figure 6.25: (left) dirty and badly maintained floor and facades near to Al Nasser Square; (middle) absence of planting and shaded trees in front of the shops along Al Hilala Street and (far right) a lack of maintenance in the public space of Al Nasser Square. Source: observation, (2014).

In addition, there was an issue related to the lack of maintenance of the street amenities, especially as regards cleanliness of the sitting spaces. From the site observations, some public places were observed where there insufficient maintenance and only periodic cleaning by the authorities, such as Al Nasser Square (see Figure 6.25). In contrast to the observation, cleaning and maintenance were highlighted by several respondents as an important aspect reflected the character of Misurata, as it is known as the clean city:

> 'Misurata is a beautiful city and it is a **cleaned and organised** city. It is one of the best Libyan cities, and it is always considered as the proverbial city and should be always be' (PF-42 Y-008, in-depth interview, 2014).

The maintenance of public spaces, planting, enhancing street furniture and amenities are the responsibility of the local authority. All the problems related to this aspect are due to the weakness of the new administration (local authority) and their poor experience in the managing of urban space. The adequate provision of good public spaces including streetscape, greenness, tree shading, and paving should be a central concern for enhancing the urban space and making it a livable space. These results further support the idea of maintenance, cleanliness, and sense of care as significant factors in generating street liveability (Francescato, 1979; Drake, 1982, Kapan et al. 1998; Francis, 1991; Nasar, 1998; Mahmoudi et al. 2015).

6.5.2 Car Congestion

In Misurata, the city centre streets were designed to give priority to the cars rather than pedestrians. This has undoubtedly affected the behaviour of people in the way they use the public spaces. In fact, the majority of the citizens travel by their own private vehicles within the city centre at all times of the day, whilst the number of pedestrians remains low. Driving has become a habit, as there are no restrictions on the use of a private car within the city centre as in many European cities where car restrictions hope to create a more livable and healthy public realm. In addition, the low price of gasoline and the absence of public transportation (i.e. buses) for a long time in the city for political reasons have meant car usage has dominated. Therefore, residents tend to drive instead of walk in the inner city centre and particularly on Tripoli Street, Benghazi Street and Sana Street. The following statements of some respondents illustrate the influence of this behaviour on walkability:

> 'Since I have gotten a driver's license, I can't remember the last time I walked in the city centre' (PF-32 Y-016, in-depth interview, 2014).

> 'I never thought about why I do not prefer to walk, but I think the reason is there is no inspiration to walk i.e. walking is not the habit of most people in this city. If people loved to walk, I would too' (PM-26 Y-012, in-depth interview, 2014).

> 'I do not prefer to walk, but sometimes if I am with my friends, we walk around and do some shopping inside the traditional area. On other streets such as Tripoli Street and Hilal Street, I just drive rather than walk' (PM-20 Y-005, in-depth interview, 2014).

These examples from the interviews show that the city centre is seen by the residents as a place for necessary activities rather than as a place for social interaction or as a space for leisure time activities.

Another factor that influences the public spaces is the absence of car parks. A lack of sufficient car parking spaces in the city centre, particularly in crowded hubs, has caused people to use the pavements for illegal on-street parking. This insufficiency of car parking spaces has led to the creation of an erratic environment. According to one interview respondent:

'The car parking is very limited and not organised in an appropriate
way, even government amenities do not have private car parks. There
is a marked weakness in terms of the number of car parking spaces
available to users' (PM-28 Y-04, in-depth interview, 2014).

The illegal parking phenomena can also be seen in the overcrowded Al
Nasser Square, Al Hoot Square, and most streets. Visual observation shows
that use of urban spaces and sidewalks as parking places have made the
pavements narrower and hindered the environmental comfort in Al Nasser
Square and its surroundings. Observation also indicated a lack of parking
facilities, which has created disorder, as cars are, therefore, parked almost
anywhere that is available (see Figure 6.26). The disruption of cars in the city
centre particularly within the First Ring Road zone, which is considered to be
the most active place, has influenced the liveability and the area has altered
significantly.

'The new line-up of shops in streets such as A Edaah ST, Sana St and
Al Hilal ST and so on,… you can walk on the pavement in front of the
shops but not in a comfortable manner, because sometimes **drivers
park their cars on them making inaccessible**' (PM-56 Y-08, in-
depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.26: The loss of public spaces through the erosion of the open spaces as a setting for
human activities. Source: observation, (2014).

Looking at the historical pictures of the city centre of Misurata before
urban development, public spaces such as Al Nasser Square and nearby the
Lefah market were the liveliest places for social interaction.

One of the reasons that led to the use of the roads and public spaces
mostly for the car rather than as places where people could socialise is the
lack of implementation of the scheme. Indeed, the proposed and approved

Master Plan of the city centre is quite different from the actual reality. Furthermore, a final report presented by (NCO, 2007, p. 38) indicated that in the area within the First Ring Road it was recommended that vehicular traffic is limited by preventing movement across. They reported that visitors should park their cars in multi-storey car parks and walk to commercial, cultural, civic and office developments. The internal access development is based on loops, which are generally one-way from the First Ring Road. In addition, to the multi-storey car parks, there would be short stay surface car parks and ranks for local taxis associated with these internal loop roads (ibid). However, the local authority did not follow these recommendations and instead followed a different design for unknown reasons, leading to a loss of public spaces as a setting for human activities. In fact, the only place that still retains its liveliness is the remaining traditional quarter and its surroundings, as will be discussed in next section.

These results confirm the movement system was designed to give more priority to vehicle circulation and caused the rapid loss of functioning as urban places for human interaction. Thus, there is now the need to revive the public spaces as places for social interaction, particularly in the city centre where the most variety of activities can occur. These results support the results of a previous study of Sauter and Huettenmoser (2008) about Switzerland's streetscapes.

6.5.3 Covered Spaces

The traditional area is characterised by narrow paved streets and rows of shops on both sides, providing a quiet and comfortable atmosphere that attracts people to walk. Indeed, the only place that still retains its vitality is the traditional quarter. This place has the same characteristics of city bazaars that were in existence in Al Nasser Square in the last century. This market is a spine of the urban fabric of the old city providing a place, which binds the public spaces together to give a sense of unity and continuity. This place is

the busiest and most popular place at the heart of the daily life of the city centre, particularly at Eids and Ramadan times. The shops are arranged and located side by side on both sides of the galleries or porticoes where enough space is left for public movement. Goods are shown in different ways, such as hanging on the walls to attract the eye of the residents, walkers or buyers (see Figure 6.27).

Figure 6.27: A covered street without cars within the old area provides a lively space. Source: Observation, (2014).

The experience of walking within this sociable space gives a different atmosphere to the outside, with an increased sense of place and a sense of distinction in comparison to other settings in the city centre, as reflected in the interviews:

> '… walking through the traditional area provides interesting feelings, and it really has a different atmosphere and strong sense of place' (PM-20 Y-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

Another interviewee stressed that the absence of cars made the place more comfortable and enjoyable:

> 'What distinguishes this place is that it contains narrow roads that cars cannot enter, so it is only for pedestrians. This gives it a different flavour from other places and provides a relaxing feeling' (PM-31 Y-020, in-depth interview, 2014).

In addition, the traditional area has been seen to have a stronger sense of community compared to other surrounding shopping streets. This was strongly expressed by more than half the interviewees:

> '[…] like in a quiet room. Here, it is really different from other markets such as in Sana Street, for example. This place has less noise and no cars, so you will only hear people chatting, talking, asking for a discount, or for goods that they are looking for and so on; it is a sociable place' (PM-25 Y-017, in-depth interview, 2014).

> 'Definitely, there is a different feeling being in the traditional area compared to being in Sana Street. The atmosphere itself is different … I often come to this place with friends moving around, talking, joking, buying, sitting. Even the sellers here are more friendly compared to Sana Street where you just buy and leave with no contact and no conversation' (PM-26 Y-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

Overall, these results suggested that it is important to keep people and activities at street level. Urban liveability involves a variety of factors i.e. paving materials, street furniture and public facilities and possibly also public art through establishing green or landscaped linkages along routes, cleanliness and generally all aspects related to 'making urban living enjoyable' (Dumbaugh and Gattis, 2005).

In addition, the physical features can be altered by pedestrianisation and traffic management schemes to refrain cars from coming in where they are not supposed to be. These findings confirm the association between liveability and physical qualities i.e. the higher the quality of place, the more livable the place is. These results are compatible with the findings of a study by Mahmoudi et al. (2015) on livable streets, which revealed that physical problems like improper walkway paving, inadequate public services and maintenance, besides traffic congestion, are deteriorating the liveability of streets. For future redevelopment, the effort to reduce vehicular volume and enhance traffic management is important to revive the public realms as social life spaces. Livable places turn roads (car traffic) into comfortable streets where social interaction and economic exchange can flourish (Carmona et al., 2010, p. 202).
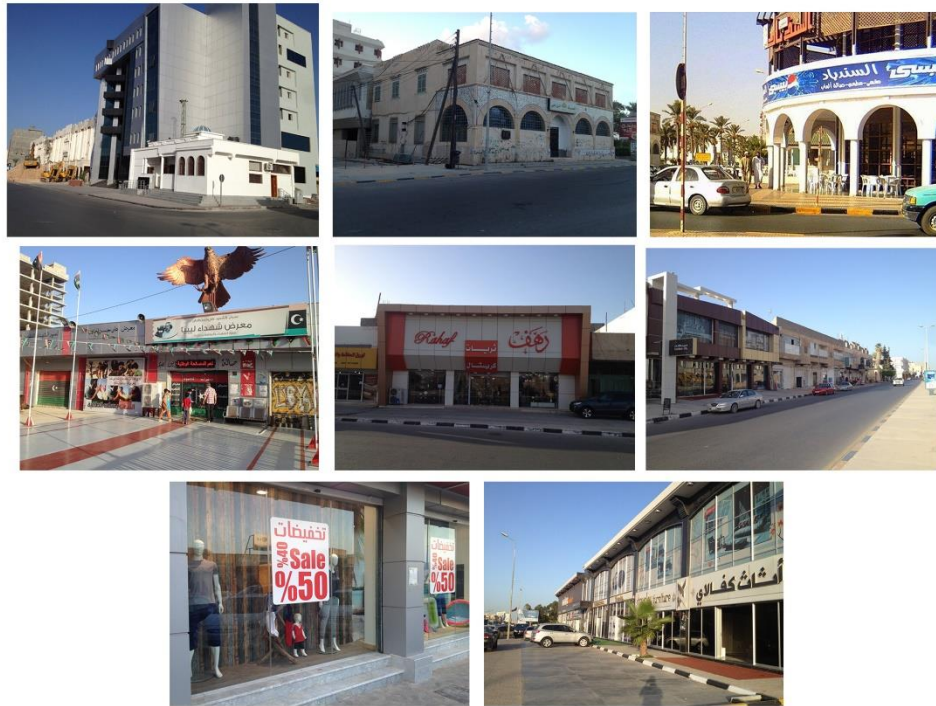
6.6   Diversity

Diverse places with mixed uses have desirable patterns, and they are vibrant, vital, attractive, safe, and joyful; therefore, diversity is one of the key ingredients for the good quality of a place (Montgomery, 1998; Jacobs, 2010; Carmona et al., 2010; Gehl, 2011).

The spatial diversity in the city centre is indicated as one of the advantages contributing to enhancing place quality by increasing interaction and chance encounters. In Misurata, streets are characterised by the existence of mixed use shops and other public buildings such as learning centres, clinics, restaurants, cafes, and other related activities. What distinguishes the streets of Misurata from other Libyan cities is that each street has a specific type of use and inclusion. For example, Tripoli Street is dominated by administrative buildings, historical buildings and some restaurants and cafes, while Abdullah Ghraib Street and Al Hilal Street both contain clothing, accessories and shoes mostly for women, as well as home furniture shops with transparent façades. This has made both streets more active, especially in Eid times (Figure 6.28). In contrast, Sana Street is dominated by men's clothing shops so most of the visitors are men. Benghazi Street has the lowest level of activity and is where most of the household shops can be found on narrow sidewalks in front of them and less transparency.

This phenomenon of customisation of street inclusion and land use was recognised by several respondents as a unique aspect contributing significantly to Misurata's character and improved city life. This was reflected in the following statement:

> Since there is no large mall in the city centre that involves all types of goods, I think it is a good idea the existing streets play this role. I mean it is helpful if you would like to buy clothes as a young man just go directly to Sana Street and there is no need to move around and around. Some things, clothes and other stuff for women, are mostly found in Abdallah Gareib Street, and this way it makes it easier for shopping in the city centre' (PM-26 Y- 012, in-depth interview, 2014).

Diveristy of building uses, architectural styles and street characteristics among Tripol Street.

Diveristy of shops, women clothings, optics shop, supermarket, restauratnts in Abdallah Garieb Street.

Householder shops, diveristy of shops, men clothings shops from the left to the right in Benghazi Street, Sana Street and Al Hilal Street.

Figure 6.28: Diversity of land use activities in the city centre of Misurata. Source: Observation, (2014).

The diversity of building use, at ground floor level, significantly contributes to the ability of streets to attract people and increase the frontage activities. This is reflected by respondent 13:

'Abdallah Garieb Street has many interesting buildings, such as KitKat restaurant, Arabic learning centre, and a variety of shops making it an attractive street' (PM-26 Y-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

In the interview, streets were mentioned by the majority of respondents because of their role as the most visited place for shopping activities and other services provided there. Street diversity considers having spatial qualities rather than objects or structure characteristics i.e. not only for mobility. One respondent asked why these streets were important to her said:

'These streets are a hub of attraction to the people. There are many shops, restaurants, cafes, and other facilities offered along these streets as you go around and through them' (PF-26 Y-018, in-depth interview, 2014).

Being a mixed-use area with a variety of goods with offers at reasonable prices in the traditional area is perceived as an important factor to attract people to visit the place. The traditional area deals with a mixture of shops with reasonable prices and offers within the same area, unlike other streets where individuals need to drive to reach them. From the site observation, a variety of categories of retail were recorded including bag and shoe shops, textile and tailor shops, jewellery and watch shops, clothing, wedding gifts, shops, restaurants, cafés and money exchange.

Jacobs (1993) noted that the greatest places those are physically, socially and economically diverse, which they contributing to enrich the public realm through the variety of activity and liveliness. The field observation revealed that building use and types that occurred along streets in the city centre provide a diverse environment and encourage encountering the places.

6.7   Transparency and Active Frontage

Figure 6.29: Transparency and active frontage of Abdallah Garieb Street. Sources: Observation, (2014).

Active frontage with a richness of openings, such as doors, shop windows, niches, columns, display details, signs, and decorations are significant for attracting people who are walking along (Jacobs, 1993; Gehl et al., 2006). The current condition of shop frontages of buildings along Abdallah Garieb Street is that most have active frontages, as seen in Figure 6.29. At some shops, some merchandise spills out onto the pavement, making it more interactive for the pedestrians. Active frontage also prevails in the traditional area e.g., Al Lefah Market and Al Nasser Square are the liveliest settings in the city centre (see Figure 6.30).

Figure 6.30: Active frontage in traditional area nearby Al Nasser Square. Source: Observation, (2014).

These frontage activities and vendors along with some streets and within the traditional area have been perceived by residents as defining the public space in a positive way, supporting the social life and attracting people to use the public space due to the presence of the active street life. Results from the surveys show that (15.9%) responses indicated the streets were memorable and noticeable owing to the presence of activities in them. However, Sana Street as one of the major streets with many new shops with modern façade design has different strategies for its fronts. It is characterized by a continuous row of shops with transparent displays at ground floor level. In contrast, Abdallah Garieb Street is seen to be more diverse with active frontage and transparency, as commented on by one respondent:

> 'I often shop and walk in Abdallah Garieb Street because it is interesting with a **variety of buildings** with shops with **large window façades**, and also many restaurants and cafes, making it an important and attractive place for many people particularly in social events such as Eid and Ramadan times' (PM-28 Y-004, in-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 6.31: Sana Street transparency with no frontage activities; shoppers park their own cars in front of the shops and leave immediately after doing their shopping. Source: Observations, (2014).

On the other hand, the short width of the pedestrian areas along Sana Street makes it difficult to have frontage activities in contrast to other streets' pedestrian zones. Therefore, Sana Street was often described in the in-depth interviews as having a formal character with less social interaction. The following statements from a young respondent illustrate the comparison between being in a traditional area with active frontage and Sana Street with modern façade shops:

> '… maybe pedestrian areas of Sana Street are not wide enough to use for walking; in addition, people sometimes park their cars on the sidewalk' (PM-26 Y- 012, in-depth interview, 2014).

> '…the traditional area is characterised by small shops all set close to each other with frontage stalls providing enjoyable spaces unlike the scene in Sana Street where large modern façades prevail. It is a sociable place, which allows for interaction with sellers and other people while Sana ST barely sees or remembers the seller; it is just formal shops with fixed prices and offers (PM-26 Y- 012, in-depth interview, 2014).

Overall, the results suggest that the places that have an active frontage such as Al Nasser Square, Al Lefah market, Abdallah Garieb Street and Al Hilal Street have a strong sense of locality and sense of place compared to other

streets that showed less active frontage (formal style). These findings support the idea that the market places, the street vendor, and the active frontage provide a great opportunity for social interaction and enhance the public realm by providing spaces for local traditions and customs such as at 'Eid' and 'Ramadan' times (both are considered the most important yearly events), and through demonstrating meaning and identity (Buchanan, 1988; Gehl, 2011; Montgomery, 2003).

Figure 6.32: Diversity in activity in the traditional area. Source: Observation, (2014).

Thus, the traditional area reflects the image of locality, providing the atmosphere for interaction and a place offering a variety of shopping options (see Figure 6.32). This place is also popular for a place to search for traditional clothing during Eid times such as high quality silk and decorations and as a centre of fashion offered by traders. It is also easy to move through and around stalls and the shop frontage activity increases the possibility of chance encounters.

The diversity of activities sometimes creates a chaotic feeling in the street due to the presence of various street activities, as occurs in Al Nasser Square, the traditional area and near the active frontage on Abdallah Garieb Street. However, these activities have been perceived as one of the advantages of being in the city centre. The results show the importance of active frontage in attracting people to use the public space and in increasing the sense of community. This is in line with Postchin (2009), and these findings suggest that enhancing the mixture of land use at street level and promoting activity patterns of urban spaces improves the quality of city life.

6.8 Walkability and Environmental Comfort

Walkability is essential for a sustainable city. Walking is an effectiveness that turns roads (car traffic) into comfortable streets where social interaction and economic exchange flourish (Carmona et al., 2010, p. 202).

Initially, from the observation, it was noticeable that the number of pedestrians is very low compared to the motorists. The hot and humid weather in Libya makes people prefer to use their own air-conditioned cars instead of walking. However, observation reveals that some places in the city centre are full of walkers because of their environmental comfort. To reveal how residents experience the walkability in the city centre, they were asked about their favorable places for walking and why they found them comfortable for walking. This section discusses the effectiveness of environmental comfort on walkability.

6.8.1 Space between Buildings

The results show that walking in environments isolated from car movement provides great opportunity for walking. This is evident in the traditional area where there is no automobile movement. The current traditional area is formed by narrow alleys, short cuts, shops, and a complete

absence of cars, which provides a comfortable atmosphere to walk in and enjoy shopping with other friends safely.

In general, the visual form of the current traditional area and its surroundings are characterised by narrow alleys and the remains of houses and other buildings that were used as hotels and are now used by the owners as shops. These narrow alleys and irregular patterns are the typical characters of many ancient Arab-Muslim cities (Abudib, 2016). In addition, the new buildings in this area were built close to each other because the land values provide a comfortable space in between buildings with more shadow and less exposure to strong sunlight (see Figure 6.33). These features of introducing covered alleys in many cases make the environment comfortable to walk in. Respondent 21 illustrates how walking in between buildings of the traditional area and its surroundings gave him a nice feeling:

> 'In the evening I usually park my car nearby Al Mukalk car park, then I walk towards the traditional area by crossing the Al Mfatoh market, and moving around passing by many shops until Al Sheikh Mosque and then turning back to the left side and crossing the Al Nasser Square where a small restaurant makes nice Sahorma sandwiches. Afterwards, I drive my car' (PM- 31 Y-021, in-depth interview, 2014).

These results suggest that in hot and humid climates places like Misurata and other Libyan cities need to enhance environmental comfort for the pedestrians through creating shadows in public spaces.
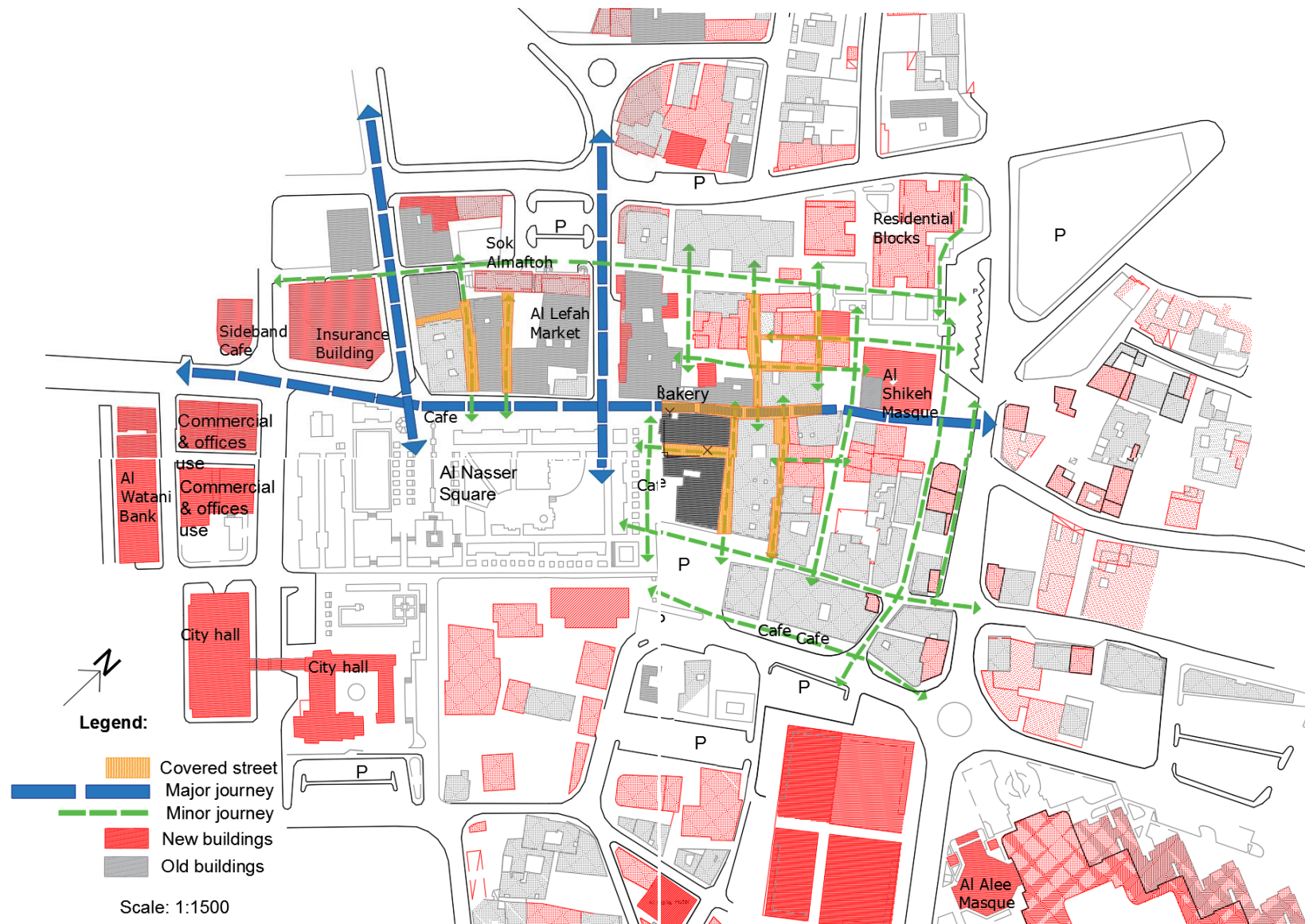
Figure 6.33: Diagram shows the movement of people in the traditional area. Source: Observation, (2014).

Figure 6.34: Space in between buildings provides a comfortable and enjoyable environment for walkability. Source: Observation, (2014).

Another benefit of narrow alleys is the lack of access for cars. The experience of walking under cover with the informal shopping activities and apart from the traffic, provide a different atmosphere 'inside' compared to other places in the city. These places increase the sense of community, as reflected in the interviews:

'...walking through the traditional area definitely, provides a different feeling compared to other streets. This area is only used by walkers and no cars can enter here. In contrast, on the sidewalks such as in Sana Street walkers are often impeded by the cars that are parked in the pedestrian areas themselves. So, it is a less noisy place in which you can feel the place and hear people chatting, talking, asking for a discount, or for goods that they looking for and so on. It is a more sociable place compared to other places in the city centre' (PM- 31 Y-021, in-depth interview, 2014).

'Being in the narrow alleys and surrounded by goods hanging on the wall and presented on stalls in front of the shops provides a comfortable space for walking' (PM- 20 Y-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

6.8.2 Streetscape

The observation revealed that there is a relationship between the effectiveness of the physical environment qualities and walkability. Problems such as inappropriate walkways with poor paving and flooring, irregular signs, greenness, low level of street furniture and maintenance are observed in Al Hilala Street, Tripoli Street, and other places in the inner city centre (see Figure 6.35).

Figure 6.35: Improper flooring with poor street furniture and plants, sellers putting trees in front of their shops to make them visible for passersby, irregular signs, and inadequate street maintenance. Source: observation, (2104).

Such problems in the streetscape have been noted by some respondents in the interview as well, which indicates that the quality and walkability of the city centre have deteriorated through the lack of physical qualities. In many cases, residents stressed that the reason why there are few walkers in the city centre is owing to the existing improper landscape features, which make the city less attractive for well-being. An example from an interview illustrates this point:

> In my opinion, there is poor infrastructure, for example, sometimes the whole street does not have a single rubbish bin for users or benches to sit on. Additionally, there is no consideration within the city's public space for people who are disabled. Ramps, car parks, lifts, shaded environments or waiting places can never be seen in public spaces (PM- 26 Y- 004, in depth interview, 2104).

These results suggest that the improper existing landscape features make the city less attractive for well-being. Features such as plants, street furniture, and comfortable walkways can make the city a more enjoyable place.

Overall, results showed that the narrow roads that were very similar to alleys in the old cities have more response to the weather and create a comfortable environment for coexisting within a place. In addition, reducing the cars' movement in urban streets can increase the choice of walkability. In line with Shawesh (2000) who did a study on three types of the neighbourhood (traditional, colonial, modern) in Tripoli, Libya, found that the comfortable environment is at the highest level in the traditional neighbourhood due to the modern streets being concentrated and directed towards the movement of cars. The findings draw parallels with Gehl's (2011) findings of the contribution of the space between buildings to the vibrant public realm and enriching walkability.

In urban design, many researchers have recognised the importance of perceptual qualities to the active life of a place but have had little empirical evidence to support the claim (Ewing et al., 2006). This research adds to the literature the importance of the physical quality for more walkable places. These results are in accord with the results of recent research carried out by Ameli et al. (2015) on the measurement protocols for urban design qualities related to walkability, as they concluded that physical qualities are important to enhance the walkability. This study confirms that walkability is also associated with other social and psychological factors such as a sense of community, enjoyment and comfort.

6.9 Chapter Conclusion

The chapter highlights the identifiable place quality that can be regarded as the distinct characteristics of the city centre of Misurata as seen by its residents, which play significant roles in defining place identity.

Imageability is one of the distinct features that strongly influenced residents' perceptions. It was found that imageability was influenced by three factors: the physical, activities and meanings. At the physical level, buildings played an important role in defining places and sometimes acted as landmarks, while streets and nodes have an important role in defining the city centre in terms of its structure. The second factor is the social dimension, and the vibrant activity that occurred in spaces such as around vendors or surrounding buildings, which enhanced the imageability of the city centre. Meaning was the third factor to influence imageability with places or buildings having significant meanings such as historical importance or relating to a specific important event or history leading people to identify them as imageable and memorable elements. These findings suggest that imageability relates not only to physical qualities (Lynch, 1960) but also to non-visual factors. This also implies that meaning is necessary for identifying a city image rather than only the physical construction (see also Pezdek and Evans, 1979 and Kaymaz, 2013).

The visual quality is the second place quality, which emerged from the data analysis. It involves tangible and intangible elements. Building façade, building height, shape, proportion and sense of enclosure were major characteristics of tangible quality that affected people's perceptions. It was found that a visual appearance provides a spatial and intimate atmosphere and gives a positive impression as a whole for the residents towards the city centre. In agreement with Appleyard's (1979) findings, this study suggests that the key attributes of texture, style, façade, colour and shape can be used to service differentiation and uniqueness. Intangible factors such as sounds and smell were the most silent features among places that were less dominated by cars and more used by

people. This suggests that places supporting social purposes have a stronger sense of place than those that give priority to vehicle use.

Direct accessibility and visibility help to determine the legibility of urban places. This study suggests the value and importance of legibility in the design of more attractive public realms towards promoting place identity. The city centre as a core of any city requires careful planning and design in terms of order, coherence, simplicity, and making a place easily identifiable. Better public space management, including proper physical quality (e.g. good paving, cleanliness, planting, street furniture), sufficient car parking spaces, and covered streets are important to increase liveability in the city. Our contemporary cities might lose their basic function and vitality if the vehicle traffic becomes a prominent priority.

Places with diverse and mixed use and activities encourage to encounter them joyfully and found to be as one feature for the good quality contributes to enhancing place identity. It was found that walkability is the most significant attribute in supporting interaction with place and influencing place experience. The traditional area received positive reactions from respondents as a place for shopping and recreational attraction, economic sustenance and cultural diversity. As such, the place was found to be meaningful and to reflect place identity. This study substantiates that walkability has a significant contribution to the sense of place. The findings of this study reveal that creating walkable environments will create sociable places and enjoyment in being in the city. Therefore, policy-makers, designers, and managers of public spaces need to provide physical improvements that make pedestrian-friendly environments, attract, and encourage a variety of activities that provide a sense of belonging for the residents of the city. The results of this chapter suggest that environmental perceptions of residents (tangibly and intangibly) should be one of the factors to consider in the design of urban places, especially when development and redevelopment are the options being considered. The next chapter (Chapter Seven) will present and discuss the results that emerged from the data associated with the meaning factor.

7   CHAPTER SEVEN: FACTORS INFLUENCING MEANINGS

7.1   Introduction

This chapter discusses the results related to the second question of the research. This question is:

- **How can places evoke inhabitants' perceptions?**

This question is associated with one objective:

(a) To identify characteristics of place meanings associated with place identity.

This chapter is divided into five main themes. Each theme discusses a specific point derived from the analysis of the results and may contain other relevant sub-categories. These themes are catagraised as place memory and knowledge, stage of life and place meaning, historical knowledge, symbolic meanings and likable environment. Figures, tables, and quotations are used throughout to illustrate and support the discussion of particular concepts. To triangulate the data, the three methods of data collection (questionnaire, interview and site observation) are combined together whereby comparisons are concurrently made amongst data to identify patterns, similarities and differences.

The chapter will be structured into seven sections that will focus on place memory and knowledge; stage of life and place meaning; historical knowledge; symbolic meninges; likeable environment; perceiving urban change and place meaning.

7.2 Place Memory and Knowledge

'*People experience the present world that is causally connected physically and mentally with past events and objects'* (Othman et al., 2013, p. 554). Where memory is the mental capacity of retaining and reviving facts, events, impressions or recalling and recognising previous experiences (Smaldone et al., 2005). Place memory is often associated with the significance of the place to individuals' life experiences (Lewicka, 2008). This section discusses the meanings that person develop with places through the life path experience and memories. This is based on self and environment relationship (Gustafson, 2001).

Analysing interview transcriptions reveals that many respondents associate their personal memory with specific places in the city centre as the main reason giving to them in evoking place meanings. The findings indicate that place memory is associated with memorable actions at the particular stages of the life of an individual in a particular place in the city centre. These actions could be places they used to visit during childhood, or from working in that place or having studied or lived in it; they could also be cherished childhood memories of being with parents or family members in the city centre.

Based on Table 7.1, despite the aforementioned, very few respondents agreed that the city centre of Misurata was appropriate for their personal lifestyles (rated at the second lowest value 2.83). The results for the statement 'Appropriate with cultural contextual of its residents' (3.05) indicate the strength of the cultural characteristics of the places through which the respondents attached meaning to their experience of Misurata. The city centre had also been strongly valued as a place that evoked residents' past memory, as the statement of 'the place makes me remember some of my past memories' was rated at a value of (3.26). This indicates that the past memory that residents experienced during their course of life with the city is strongly associated with the meanings embedded by particular memories.

Table 7.1: Meanings associated with place based on the mean vlaue.

Meaning items	Scale	Strongly agree	Agree	Neither	Disagree	Strongly disagree	Mean	Std. De
The best place for earning money	Frequency	107	57	3	7	2	2.92	1.07
	Percentage	60.8%	32.4%	1.7%	4.0%	1.1%		
This place means a lot to me	Frequency	105	58	2	11	0	3.46	0.80
	Percentage	59.7%	33%	1.1%	6.3%	0%		
The modern styles are meaningful more than the traditional area in the city centre	Frequency	52	67	5	38	14	2.6	1.32
	Percentage	29.5%	38.1%	2.8%	21.6%	8%		
Appropriate with my lifestyle	Frequency	59	74	8	25	10	2.83	1.20
	Percentage	33.5%	42%	4.5%	14.2%	5.7%		
Appropriate with cultural context of its residents	Frequency	69	76	7	19	5	3.05	1.05
	Percentage	39.2%	43.2%	4%	10.8%	2.8%		
The place makes me remember some of my past memories	Frequency	91	62	6	13	4	3.26	0.99
	Percentage	51.7%	35.2%	3.4%	7.4%	2.3%		

Source: Survey, (2014).

Memories mentioned by the majority of respondents regarding the old part of the city centre were associated with shared activities and the physical changes. The memories include shopping with parents during childhood within the traditional area that has changed from a space for local shopping activities towards being a more chaotic area with modern office blocks built in the last few decades. Respondents mentioned some daily activities they used to do in the old centre such as going to the cinema close to Nasser Square during their younger years with their friends, or buying traditional clothes and taking daily 'tea and coffee' with other friends. These nostalgic memories towards the disappeared places of the ancient centre were grievously expressed by a respondent who lived nearby during his adulthood:

> 'I lived in the city centre before many of the traditional parts were destroyed. I knew this place even before some of the current streets existed. I can remember places such as 'Fetorry' bakery, where we used to go to the Al Aaeb Cinema, taking daily coffee in Traplsi café. Indeed, a lot of nice memories in the ancient city have gone when this place was destroyed' (PM-56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

These places mentioned by the interviewer such as Fetorry bakery, Al Aaeb Cinema, Traplsi coffee were key features of the old city that no longer exist. Abdul-Karim (2011) in his book regarding the old centre of Misurata entitled 'of what guilt it was demolished' pointed out that these places, among others, were

part of the city's identity. The daily life of the old centre was repeatedly indicated in the interview, as most of them missed parts that reflected the city's identity.
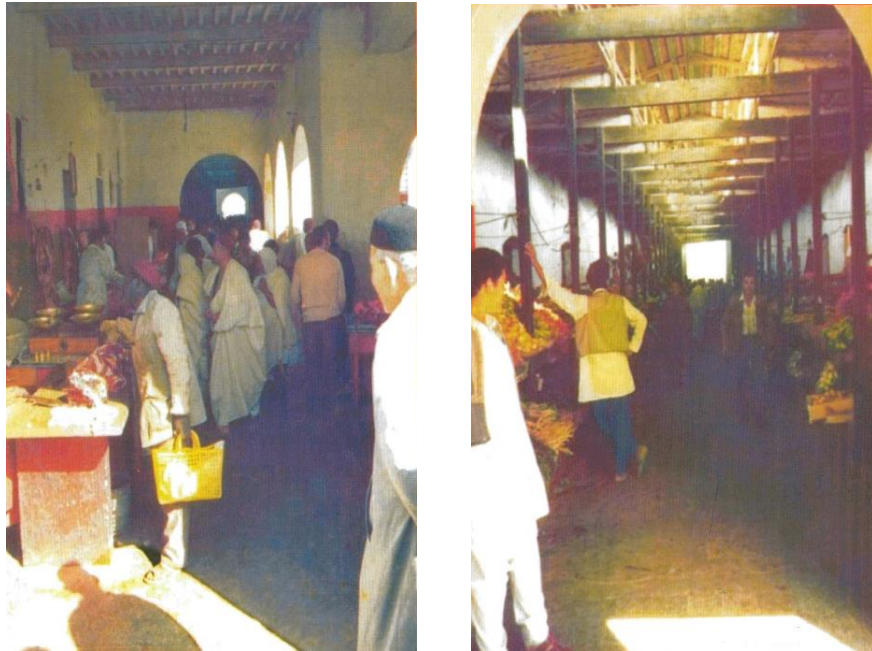

Figure 7.1: Social life in the old centre, meat market and vegetable market nearby Al Lefah Market. Source: Abdul-Karim, (2011, pp. 20-21).

Another female respondent who lived in Benghazi Street also stressed intimate feelings about the traditional market, as she said:

> 'when I was a child, I used to visit the traditional area with my father for shopping...I remember Lefah store selling the very antique and traditional stuff such as 'Kleem', which is handmade embroidery with nice trappings on it. In the past people used to put them on their living room wall to decorate it...' (PF-39 Y-009, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 7.2: 'Kleem' as appears on the top of one store of the traditional market. Source: Observations, (2014).

These results suggest that past memories that a person had in a specific place and time are found to be one of the important indicators, which are associated with meanings through evoking people's past life experiences. As argued by Tuan (1977), places become meaningful when they are felt to be significant, but the findings of the study suggest that with the current changes being made places begin to hold less significant meaning to the residents. The place memories that a person had with a place in a stage of their life can evoke meanings because they become part of their personal identity. Therefore, they express a sense of grief when these places disappear or are subjected to change. This suggests that, in line with (Othman et al., 2013 and Lewicka, 2008), there is some resemblance between memory and place; it is like a nested texture, our personal experience and identities are interwoven with space and places.

A significant place that is related to past memories can provide guidelines for the residents to define the place identity, especially when alterations are made to the image of the city. Moreover, in line with Ujang and Zakariya (2015b),

it can be argued that place memories contribute significantly to the perception of the place identity.

In sum, places have been regarded as special settings where memory of the past is embedded in the residents' experiences. The memory is particularly strong when it relates to the transformation of the places from the early stages. The daily activities, products customs, traditions and activities with close relatives are identified as memorable and meaningful. Thus, the traditional area strongly reflected this association due to the shared memory of the city.

These findings suggest that urban places are imbued with meanings (Relph, 1976), therefore, considering the place as a lived in experience of individuals as an approach in regeneration development could provide a useful source of evidence in identifying an advantage factor that may contribute to promoting the place identity. Lim (2005, p. 4) observed that the urban development process should respond to the socio-cultural dimension, where the place well-being and people's '*valuable and memorable elements*' as a result can be produced. It is important to understand the roles of place meanings through examining the place memory and knowledge of the environment that imbued in the past experience of the residents. This can be done by identifying and conserving places, buildings, activities pattern of the place that holds meanings and has the ability to evoke the memory of the individual as part of his personal identity or the community identity.

7.3 Stage of Life and Place Meaning

In the interview, respondents were asked to indicate features that they consider have meanings for them. Some participants expressed the past memories that they had of their childhood or during primary school or neighbourhoods where they grew up. As places were being referred to by respondents from their past perspectives, it was decided this category would be regarded as the theme of nostalgic memories. Respondents associated meanings through nostalgic memories that were used to describe places of their work,

education, the ancient city, Sana Street, and neighbourhood. An example was given by respondent 5's description of Al Mokalak market:

'For me, Al Moklak market is a special place, because I worked at this place as a trader for three years, and made lots of good friends. I had a good time in this place. Until now, I usually visit this place and my friends there. Today, it is struggling to keep up with the original design in which many traders tend to open a shopping window and doors directly to the road, which adds to its design as all stores open up inside the atrium' (PM-33 Y-005, In-depth interview, 2014).
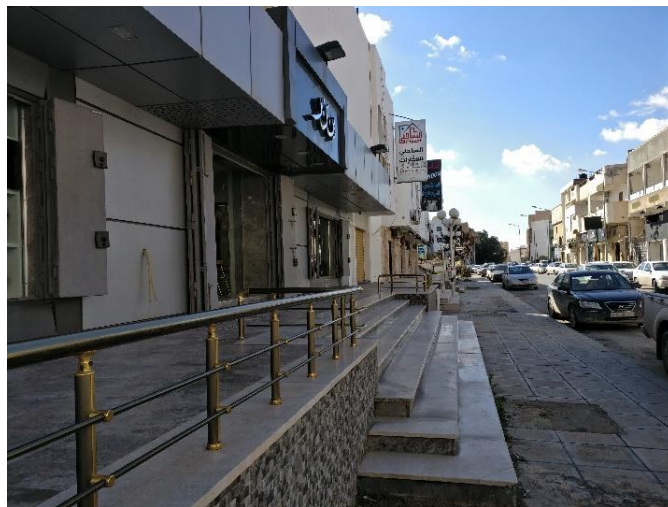

Figure 7.3: New façade redesigned by the owners to open the doors in front of the roads. Source: Observation, (2014).

Respondents relate their memories of the city centre with shared activities. These include shopping with family during childhood, going to the cafes with friends during younger stages of life and buying clothes for Eid. Some of these are expressed by the following respondents:

'Sana Street is my special place because it is one of the earliest streets in the city centre. It consists of many interesting shops I used to visit; I have many memories about this street. I used to go to the photography shop, take a photo with my siblings during the Eid time or sometimes for party events' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

'I used to come up to a café called Al Madinah', it was a small café located in a quiet place, with my close friends to watch TV, talk, enjoy and have tea and coffee…we had a lot of nice times and memories in this place' (PM-31 Y-002, In-depth interview, 2014).

The results of this study indicate that one important aspect of person–place connections in the city centre of Misurata was how time and length of association with the place played a substantial role in forming place meanings. This finding has been noted in previous research (Moore and Graefe, 1994; Smaldone et al., 2005; Morgan, 2010). Moving through one's life can build a meaning between a person and places through the life cycle experience (Rubinstein and Parmelee, 1992; Hay, 1998). The findings of this research suggest that places are not a static entity but they are always changing and generating different kind of meanings (Mausner, 1996).

7.4 Historical Knowledge

According to Nasar (1998), elements evaluated by residents as needing to be kept are meaningful elements because they have a significant value. Therefore, in the surveys and the interview, people were asked what features of the city centre they felt needed to be retained. Meanings of place are about the relationship between individual and place, and this relationship is often based on the individuals' knowledge of the place (Gustafson, 2001).

Results show that knowledge of historical values of the urban environment influence residents' perceptions. The historical knowledge was used as a clue to meanings in recognising the Historical Castel Building, Al Nasser Square and Al Lefah market Seyahi Building, Tripoli Street, Traditional area, Al Lefah market and Al Nasser Square. The Historical Castle was noted by many respondents as the most important building in the city centre because it has unique architectural features reflecting the authenticity of the place. The following statement reflects this:

> 'Since Ottoman times, the Historic Castle has played an important administrative role during the successive governments […] this building has unique architectural characteristics such as long windows, balcony, beautiful colour, nice decoration on the top interface, clock tower above the entrance …all of these features can be found today in other buildings' (PM-31 Y-020, In-depth interview, 2014).

Some respondents recognised Al Nasser Square as it has historical significance because it is related to the history of the early development of the city centre. Evidence of the recognition of this was reflected in one respondent's description. Another respondent expressed disappointment with the changes that had taken place in Al Nasser Square in the redevelopment process.

> 'In my opinion, the current design does not encourage people to use it, with bad walking path designs,… personally, the current Al Nasser Square is the final memory grave for what was done in the old city of Misurata' (PM-56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

This shows the importance of Al Nasser Square in the memory of the population. In terms of the changes in the physical environment, in the questionnaire, respondents were asked to indicate what features needed to be retained in the future and why they felt they were important for them. Table 7.2 shows that the traditional area was, for a significantly high percentage of the respondents (69.3%), one of the places they felt should be retained. This result indicates that the historical knowledge influences people's perceptions.

In the questionnaire, Al Lefah Market and the Historical Castel Building were valued by the highest number of respondents, which were rated at 66% and 45% respectively as the most important places that should be retained in the future (see Table 6.8). A part of the traditional area, Historical Castel and Al Nasser Square, were also mentioned but at lower levels of (9.7%) and (2.8%). This is maybe because respondents often consider that these two places are part of the traditional area and they have the same historical significance. However, the Mokalak Market was mentioned by some respondents because it is located adjacent to the Historical Castel within the old central area.

Table 7.2: Places to be retained

Features	Frequency (No=176)	Percentage
Al Alee Masque	12	6.8%
Traditional area	122	69.3%
Al Nasser Square	5	2.8%
Historical Castle	17	9.7%
Insurance Building	8	4.5%
Soke Al Moklak	12	6.8%

Source: Survey, (2014).

The reason that was given by the highest percentage of respondents (34.1%) was due to the historical importance (see Table 7.3). Notably, respondents, when reminding them of the reason for maintaining the ordinary buildings such as the Insurance Building and Al Mokalak Market, their answers were due to their present function and location. On the other hand, the reasons given for traditional buildings to be retained were deeper and associated with meanings, cultural values and symbols, and nostalgic memories. This suggests that the retention of traditional buildings located in the central areas of the city centre, and those which were greatly neglected by the former authority, were valued and hold meaning for the inhabitants.

Table 7.3: Why places need to be retained

Features	Frequency (No=176)	Percentage
Has historical interest	60	34.1%
Suitable for its present function and location	32	18.2
The most beautiful buildings	13	7.4
Reflect our culture	12	6.8
Provide a symbolic meaning	17	9.7
Provide nostalgic memories	10	5.7
Provide a uniqueness	11	6.3
Provide sense of belonging	11	6.3
Shared important events	4	2.3
Associated with place identity	6	3.4

Source: Survey, (2014).

Al Nasser square, for example, was recognised by several respondents because it is located in the core of the city centre, which has the earliest marketplace where there used to be a fresh vegetable market for the local people. It used to be an interactive place for the residents, as mentioned by Respondent 04 in his description of Al Nasser square.

> 'Al Nasser Square is famous for its weekly market and the variety of markets put on there, such as vegetables, grain, textiles and meats, and so on, really this place used to be a place of attraction for local people' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

In the interview, respondents show a depressed feeling regarding the ignorance of the historical significance of Misurata that holds valued meanings reflecting a wealth of history inherited from the past generations during the development process of the last three decades.

Al Lefah Market was mentioned commonly as the building most reflecting place identity and considered to have strong features associated with place meaning. Traditionally, this market is an important aspect of the commercial life of the old city of Misurata. In this market, traditional hand-made clothing, gold and textiles are displayed and sold. The strong and unique characteristic of traditional markets can be perceived by their internal design and also by their building material and structure. Thick walls, local material i.e. clay and woods, and small openings are located on the roof to provide natural lighting into the interior space and also to help circulate the air inside the market. This makes the interior dark and cool in the summer and warm in the winter. It was observed that there is no air conditioning used in this market. Goods are shown in different ways, such as hanging on the walls to attract the eye of the residents, walkers or buyers.

Figure 7.4: A view of Al Lefah Market showing the uniqueness of the old market. Source: Observations, (2014).

However, this market has been left for a long time without any effort of conservation or treatments of its dilapidated structure. Sadly, one old man who has owned a shop in this market since 1955 comments that:

> 'the engineers of the city hall have visited this place many times and took measurements and did all recordings promising to do all the treatments but they never came back again' (Observation, 2014).

The lack of urban conservation is a common issue in all existing traditional buildings due to insufficient policies as a result of the lack of conservation by the city council in managing urban heritage (see Figure 7.5). Many of the respondents commented on the traditional zone deteriorating architectural quality and this is clearly one of the main challenges in attempting to retain the city centre image and identity.

> 'One thing that can be beneficial to the identity of Misurata is to retain the existing heritage buildings, and I believe if the local authority one day decide to rebuild the destroyed part of the old centre it would be a great step towards enhancing the identity of the city' (PM- 20 Y-013, in-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 7.5: The lack of conservation in Al Lefah Market. Source: Observations, (2014).

Overall, these results indicate that the historical knowledge played an important role in the recognition of meanings for residents of Misurata. The historical knowledge appears to evoke favourable responses through favourable associations with the past images (Nasar, 1998). The place identity cannot be intact unless the historical significance of the place is conserved and maintained throughout the development process of a place. Therefore, efforts in conversation should be considered to enhance the place identity. These findings support the ideas of Stovel (1994) in Jive'n & Larkham (2003, p. 78) that *'authenticity will be reflected in the continuation of traditions and traditional types of function and use. This will necessarily involve gradual changes in the built environment that may be seen as an expression of an authentic cultural and social spirit'*.

7.5 Symbolic Meanings

In Misurata, there are very few icons that are used to symbolise the city centre but there are some, namely Tanboor Building, Al Alee Mosque and the Historical Castle Building. All of them are located in the city centre and the reasons given to be used as symbolic meanings rely on the function and shape, religious and historical significance. However, there is another intangible value that emerged from the data analysis, which acted as an important factor in determining the symbolic meanings of certain elements of the environment, and

that is the important events. These five types of symbolic meanings will be discussed in detail in the following sections.

In order to determine which attributes and symbols of place strongly contribute to meaning and place identity, in the interview and surveys, respondents were requested to identify all the features that can be used to symbolise Misurata. Table 7.4 shows the most perceived symbols as frequently indicated by respondents. Notably, (39.2%) of the participants listed the Insurance Building as an icon for Misurata followed by the Al Alee Mosque (34.7%), while only 5.1% rated the Tanboor. Unlike the interview result, the Historical Castel Building was scored at a relatively lower level (13.6%). What is interesting about the data in this table is that in many instances individuals initially attributed the importance of certain physical elements to the presence of some characteristics that hold connotative meanings to them. Indeed, there is a certain reason for this result, which provides further explanations. These aspects can be divided into two major characteristics physical and social aspects. The physical factor includes the historical significance, location, and shape, while the social factor is the shared important events in the community. Analysis of the interview transcripts revealed further explanations for this result.

Table 7.4: Respondents' perception of the symbols.

Elements	Missing values 16	
	Frequency	Percentage
Insurance Building (Events)	69	39.2%
Al Alee Mosque (Religious)	61	34.7%
Al Tanboor (Function)	9	5.1%
Historical Castel (Historical)	24	13.6%

Source: Survey (2014).

7.5.1 City Memory (Tanboor Building)

Tanboor building is located on the Second Ring Road and was designed in the 1980s as a monument to the battle of 'Goz-Tik', which took place in the same place where Tanboor is built. Thus, its vertical design that can be viewed from different angles and parts of the city gives a kind of inspiration for a particular event. Therefore, the importance of this building relies on the memory of a specific event that happened in the history of the city.

> 'Misurata has symbols, Jihad symbols and history and we have a known historical landmark, which is the Gozteak Hotel, which is its name because the Mujahedeen went against the Italians who were tying their legs with ties called Tikah' (PF-39 Y-009, in-depth interview, 2014).

The internal function use of this is an exhibition of traditions and some special archaeology of the city. This building is surrounded by a garden and a play area so most of its visitors are families.

Figure 7.6: Tanboor garden on festival day shows traditional items and displays old artefacts and traditional costumes. Source: https://plus.google.com, accessed in 28/3/2017.

Figure 7.7: Some archaeological discoveries are displayed inside the Tanboor Building. Source: https://plus.google.com/, accessed in 28/3/2017.

The Tanboor building is a well-known building for the residents and is often used as a symbol or icon for the city because it is related to the early history of the city, as already stated. However, nowadays the Tanboor receives less attention and is less acknowledged as an icon for Misurata. The reason behind this seems to be that since the building was closed a long time ago to visitors for unknown reasons, many people think the building is pointless and has no significance, as stressed by one respondent:

> 'Many people have no idea about this building nor what exactly it is about…it is a museum of Misurata and contains many heritage items and other exhibitions' (PM- 26 Y-012, in-depth interview, 2014).

The same respondents made a further point to support this idea about the Tanboor no longer being a strong icon for Misurata and why some people do not like it:

> I remember when the University of Misurata decided to use the Tanboor building as a logo for the university, it received great criticism from people on social media and they do not like to use it any more to represent the city. They felt this building is not relevant to Misurata as one person on Facebook commented that many of Gadhafi's symbols can be found everywhere in the building. This is really strange because although this building was built during Gadhafi's rule it is definitely not representative of him at all' (PM- 26 Y-012, in-depth interview, 2014).

> 'I consider this building unique and surely it can be used as an icon for Misurata for two important reasons: firstly, this building is unique in terms of shape and structure, which can be seen in other places in the country, so it is only for Misurata. Secondly, it is structured as a memorial to the

martyrs of Gozteak monument, so it is regarded as a historical event memory' (PM- 26 Y-012, in-depth interview, 2014).

These statements from the interview suggest that Tanboor building became a symbol for two reasons; firstly, because of its functional use as a museum for the city and secondly, because it holds collective historical memory for the city. Symbolism may be acquired not only by the power of design or appearance (i.e. Opera Sydney) but also from the meaning connotations that are represented to the society. In line with Downs and Stea (1973, p. 80), the findings suggest that '*the physical structure can be seen as not what it is, but what it represents*' and in the case of Tanboor it represents the city's memory and that particular city memory is of the symbolic meaning.

7.5.2 Religious/ Al Alee Mosque

In terms of religious importance and unique design, the Al Alee mosque has been selected by (34.7% from Table 0.3) in the surveys and more than half the interviewees to be the symbol for the city. Al Alee Mosque is considered the largest mosque in the city located in the central hub of the city centre. It has an unusual design in form compared to other mosques in Misurata. The geometrical shape, two high minarets and the white and blue colour give it a particular and unique shape (see Figure 7.8).

Figure 7.8: Al Alee Mosque. Source: https://plus.google.com/, acceseed in 20/3/2017

Many interviewees pointed out the innovative design of the building in being recognised as an aspect of the formation of symbols or landmarks in the context of the city centre. A further analysis revealed that one of the interviewees related this uniqueness in design and form to a specific meaning such as Islamic principles and political events.

> 'Al Alee Mosque is a unique building because it cannot be seen elsewhere. It has a unique architectural design with octagon form, which is an eight pointed star that reflects the Islamic principles. Another thing that makes the mosque unique is the white and blue colour. Historically, the first flag for the first Republic of Tripoli was blue with a palm tree in the middle, and on top of it a white star. I believe that these two colours of white and blue belong to Misurata city' (PM-26 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 7.9: The flag of the Republic of Tripoli, established in 1918, shows the blue background and white star. Source: www.ar.wikipedia.org/wiki/, accessed in 11/5/2017.

The idea of the formation of the Republic of Tripoli began in the city of Misurata following the defeat of the Axis Powers in the First World War and the cessation of the Turkish-German support of the Libyan resistance against the Italian occupation. Therefore, the white and blue colours have associations with the political history of the city.

The idea of bringing some meanings and connotations of place, such as political history or other important city memories in designing buildings or public spaces, can generate meanings in the new design. This is good criteria for innovative design to be considered by architects and urban designers. These findings corroborate the idea of Gospodini (2004) who found that innovative design and urban heritage are a source of place meaning.

7.5.3 Historical Significance

'*Historical significance rests on the observer's perception. An environment could either have authentic historic significance or simply look historic to the observer'* (Nasar, 2008, p. 360). Similar to that which might have been expected, respondents are thinking of their heritage schemes as the strongest features creating a unique city. Regarding the answers to 'why is this place or building unique', most of the respondents referred to the morphology as adding to the symbol of the city.

In the city centre of Misurata, the built heritage has been greatly ignored. This is evident as half of the old city's valuable buildings were destroyed in order to build new large-scale residential and commercial blocks, which has led to a massive gap in the urban continuity. Based on the site observation, some renovated and rebuilt buildings are now using a modern architectural style with simpler façades and modern materials, such as concrete and glass in their appearances. The current condition of the remaining part of the traditional area is not at all conserved or maintained by the local authority and has been obstructed by many random changes. However, the traditional display of some buildings - that still retain their original design such as Al Lefah Market and

Historical Castle - contribute to place identity by evoking the city's history and traditions (built and cultural heritage).

Findings from the in-depth interview revealed that the importance of historical features of the city centre influences a respondent's perception of an element, as shown by the respondent's description of an element based on past events and the changes in the physical appearance over a period of time. Historical significance was used as a clue in indicating historical buildings, the Historical Castle Building and Al Lefah old market. However, the majority of respondents referred to the Historical Castle as the most suitable symbol for Misurata. There are two possible explanations justifying the respondents' choice of building while the Old market received less attention from them. First, this building was still fully in use for administrative functions and located within a visible site on Tripoli Street in front of the central garden. This gives it a dominant appearance in the townscape. The second reason is related to its historical significance, as it is considered one of the oldest remaining buildings in the city. This was reflected by one respondent who mentioned the Historical Castle as the earliest building in the city centre.

> 'The Historical Building beside the flag pole can be used as a symbol for Misurata city... this is a very beautiful building, and it should be maintained and preserved because this building is old and we must consider the old things...' (PF-46 Y-008, In-depth interview, 2014).

Thus, it can be said that the historical buildings are identified as the most significant elements, as they reflect the authenticity that is recognised by residents as a key factor associated with symbolic meanings of place. The historical significance of the earliest feature in the city centre evoked a connotative meaning to the residents, thus influencing their cognition. This result also supports the theory that assumes the traditional heritage aspects are associated with meanings and reflect the unique character stronger than modernity (see e.g. Ouf, 2001; Hussain and Ujang, 2014).

7.5.4 Important Events

Places may have a symbolic significance after specific events. The importance of the events in generating meaning to a place was clearly observed during the content analysis. For instance, the data showed that certain ordinary buildings and streets became very important and acted as a symbol or even as a memorial monument for the residents, particularly after the revolution of 17th February 2011.

It is worth mentioning that in 2011, Libya joined the Arab Spring and the city of Misurata, in particular, suffered deeply during this war. Insurance Building and Tripoli Street suffered destruction and have seen a lot of fighting between rebels and soldiers of Gadhafi. To date, people are celebrating the anniversary of the end of the Gaddafi's regime in the hope of advancement of a new democratic state. The following statements illustrate how places are imbued with meanings because of the important events:

> 'Tripoli Street is of great importance, especially after the war. Many young people died for freedom, dignity and in fighting against injustice. Every corner of this street and every building witnessed the hurt and the sacrifices of the rebels. This place has become part of our history' (PM-20 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

One respondent, when asked to identify the building that could be used as an icon for the city centre of Misurata, said:

> 'Definitely, the Insurance Building…look, if you asked me this question before the 17th Feb revolution, I would have said something different, probably I would not give it any attention. But now, it has become a very important building and surely can be used as a symbol because simply it is our history that should be kept for the following generations' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

One respondent suggests that the insurance building should be kept as it was after the war for the next generation.

> I have been to Belgrade (Kosovo), and I was looking for landmarks of this city and then I found that one of the landmarks of the city was the old radio station that was bombed by NATO's army (may be 1993) and it has been kept as it was until now although the rest of the city has developed and changed. So, I suggest that the insurance building should be kept as it is now and used as a symbol because it is a history that needs to be preserved (PM-26 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

Figure 7.10: The Insurance Building as it appeared after the 2011 war. Source: http://www.ifriqiyah.com, accessed in 11/5/2107.

Most interviewees showed a deeper expression towards the Insurance Buildings, which has been seen by residents as not just a building located in the city centre but as a new history established for the city and Libya as a whole. Hence, on the basis of the evidence currently available, it seems fair to suggest meanings can be symbolised by the importance of social events. Along similar lines to Kaymaz (2013), the data appears to suggest that place identity is more than just the physical form; it also involves a meaning for the person and the society. Likewise, Downs and Stea (1973, p. 80) argued that '*although the physical structure is seen, the response is, therefore, symbolic - not to what it is, but to what it represents - that is, to the meanings'*. Thus, it can be argued that meanings are not just a material element-formed, but also are linked to social events and the emotions attached to them.

7.6 Likeable Environment

Apart from meanings and associations, likability consideration was also a factor, which influenced the meaning. This factor deals with what the residents like and dislike about the city centre socially and their aspirations (Nasar, 1998). In the interview, respondents were asked to evaluate their environmental knowledge about the city, such as which places they like and dislike and why, in

order to reveal underlying dimensions of place meanings. The interview transcript analysis revealed that, in general, the city centre was well liked by the respondents and there were very few negative comments about the city centre. The only comment made was that the respondents felt that some parts of the city centre were used badly by young people.

Results indicated that the likeable places are those supporting people's leisure activities, as one respondent comments:

> 'I like the Al-Nasser square. Although this place has been left a long time without maintenance, many activities take place there, and particularly, at Eid and during Ramadan they are very interesting. It is really a nice place for shopping with friends. There are many options with reasonable pierces and a variety of goods offered there' (PM-50 Y-021, In-depth interview, 2014).

Others mentioned places where they felt comfortable, which led them to like the place.

> 'I often love to do my shopping in the old market, which still holds some of the smells of the past and the remains of ancient buildings and narrow streets and some of the details and the windows and the relationship between the space and light and so on' (PM-56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

However, on further reflection made by a female, she found Taxi Square quite intimidating because the place is often dominated by young men and sometimes they behave inappropriately. The comment below illustrates this:

> '… I do not like the Taxi square. This open space is located in the heart of the city centre but is not used in the correct way. This place is often used badly by young people for certain unwise behaviour such as what we called Tsatrip, which increases noise and air pollution resulting from the vehicles' fumes' (PF-32 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

A similar comment was made by a middle-aged male respondent regarding the Taxi Square, as he also disliked the place as he regarded it as being used badly by young people.

> I dislike the bridge of Salam nearby the taxi square. It is not associated with any values […] It is an unsuitable place to stay and you know what type of behaviour is occurring there; this place increasingly receives a bad reputation due to certain actions taking place there…' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

Hence, the older and female residents felt uncomfortable in the Taxi Square, which was also not a suitable place for the family leisure activities. In contrast, young people found this place comfortable and good for leisure activities. This indicates the variation in the use of public space based on the respondents' age and gender.

People in Misurata for social reasons like to use the public spaces separately between men and women. Therefore, the taxi square is indicated as a good place by younger male respondents while female and older respondents showed a lack of preference for it. Moreover, many respondents in the interview commented about the limitation of proper public spaces for all groups of people regardless of gender or age group, and this was one of the disadvantages of being in the city centre. This factor left an impression on them, as one interviewee put it:

> 'Poor infrastructure, for example, no rubbish bins anywhere, with sometimes entire streets not having a rubbish single bin for users. Additionally, the car parking is very limited and not organised in an appropriate way; even government amenities have no private car park' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

As regards the infrastructure, a negative response was also mentioned in terms of the lack of greenery. Increasing greenness, open spaces, trees and features can provide an attractive environment to support the core activities in the city centre. Results from observations indicated that trees and greenery were very much absent throughout the city centre except for the central garden or series of palm trees alongside the Al Baladyah Street.

This result suggests that meaningful places are not just dependent on elements that are liked or favoured by the residents but also include those that give negative impressions. Places can be meaningful and appreciated when they support the desirable activities and cultural requirements. This finding is encouraging and suggests that as we all have similar underlying visual preferences it should be possible for places to change in ways that find favour with the majority of people (Gjerde, 2011).

7.7   Sense of Belonging and Pride

Based on the interviews, the sense of pride and belonging were notable due to place meanings. Sense of pride was expressed in relation to specialties of the place, from the historic features to local and traditional products such as the handmade clothing of Farmalh, Misurati hats, specially produced carpet, silk and other traditional costumes where the distinct products of special quality could not be found in any other place in the country. This pride of place can be felt in the following description:

> 'A couple of weeks ago, my relative from Benghazi visited me, and this was the first time for him in Misurata. I took him to the traditional area including Al Lefah Market, and he was impressed by this place because he had never seen this kind of stuff anywhere else. This belongs to Misurata. This market has a long unique history back to the Ottoman period. The original wooden roof, thick clay wall and wooden doors give it a unique character. This place is used to attract tourists to the city' (PM-31 Y-020, In-depth interview, 2014).

Considering the importance of historic places, the majority of the respondents associated their sense of belonging by expressing the way that unique places should be conserved by reusing and readopting them in response to urban change.

> 'The old area, especially the Al Lefah market, belongs to everyone and should be properly maintained. I would like to see the surrounding area developed nicely with restaurants and cafés, trees, flowers and so on to be used by all residents as well as a point of attraction for tourists' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

It can be inferred that the old market has been perceived as a more valuable place in relation to the residents' sense of belonging compared to other places such as Sana Street and Tripoli Street. This suggests that the historical significance of the old market as the earliest shopping market in Misurata evoked a lot of meanings to the residents, thus influencing their degree of attachment. People and activity are the key components of a living place that generate a sense of belonging and spirit of the people or community (Steele, 1981). Such a place activity occurred in a traditional area used by respondents as a source of self-identification (Twigger-Ross & Uzzell, 1996). Respondents used the place of

the city traditions for telling others who they are, as they felt such places are belonging to them and 'represent' their city (Gustafson, 2001).

7.8 Perceiving Urban Change and Place Meaning

One of the influencing factors for place meanings is the physical changes and improvement of the place. It was expressed through the respondents' reactions towards changes in the existing physical form as well as the uses that shape the character of the places. In the survey and interviews, respondents were also asked about their aspirations for the city centre in order to uncover aspects of it that have the potential of contributing to its identity.

Table 7.5: summarises the responses to the open-ended question in the survey regarding what needed to be improved to sustain the place identity in the city centre.

By adopting the Islamic architectural style and principles
Conserve heritage buildings values
Maintain the good behaviour of individuals and society
Adopting modern style
Keeping it organised and clean
Better facilities
Through the city pattern and commercial character and adherence to customs and traditions
More places for family and children
More comfortable pedestrian paths
New design must be referred to the traditional character
Regulation of traffic in the streets
More control on car parking
Reduce traffic movement
The development of leisure public spaces and enhancement
Improve landscape and comfort
More trees planted

Source: Surveys, (2014).

The survey result, in many instances, as shown in Figure 7.3, indicates that in order to maintain place identity respondents referred to two main ways, namely through maintaining existing heritage buildings and secondly, through building modern buildings. Other suggestions for sustaining place identity in future developments referred to merging both authenticity and modernity in innovative new ideas and creative design. These results indicate the awareness

of the importance of heritage values that have been neglected by the local authority in designs adopted in past planning schemes and throughout the development process of the city centre.

> 'In order to save the identity two key elements should be taken into account; first conserving the built heritage and the second is considering the local condition in developing newly designed places' (PM-56 Y-006, In-depth interview, 2014).

This indicates that residents felt traditional and historic buildings are significantly suffering from a lack of attention by the prior governments. This means that the old buildings were very important to the population because of their architectural style and connotation of cultural values that implied for them. The current problem tackled by the traditional quarter is that the condition of the old buildings are in poor condition and need urgent treatments maintenance. It can be assumed that conservation efforts to restore and relive the old center of Misurata would have a positive impact on the Misurata's identity because heritage values of these buildings were very distinctive to the residents. This implied that residents' aspiration of the Misurata' identity included the retention of places that had historical significance.

However, enhancing the place identity for some other respondents is not restricted only at the point of urban conservation, but also through introducing modern architecture. Their aspiration is to see the city centre developed in proper ways by adopting creative designs associated with the local conditions of Misurata. Even one young male respondent went beyond this when he stressed the importance of reviving the built heritage in order to maintain the place identity as superfluous.

> 'Innovative design can generate a new feeling and meanings to a place, and we should not always restrict the built heritage in order to acquire a strong identity to place. He provided a deeper expression regarding how the city centre should be shaped in the near future' (PF-39 Y-009, In-depth interview, 2014).

Other respondents stressed that the innovations and creative ideas in enhancing landscape features can generate meanings of place. Many of the respondents in the interview noticed that there were very few trees planted in

the city centre area similar to other major towns and cities in Libya. Therefore, many respondents expressed that more trees should be planted to improve the quality of the city centre. Trees were noticed for their functional purposes of providing more shadows in the city centre as well as for improving the aesthetic qualities. As one interviewee stated:

> 'More open spaces, gardens, playgrounds, amusement parks, trees and more greenness would create a wonderful environment for a better city life' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

The same respondent mentioned a specific type of tree (palm trees) as a unique plant associated with the city and its region.

> 'Palm trees characterised the middle land regions where this tree can grow such as Misurata city' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

This suggests that naturalness was found to be an important element of place that significantly influenced people's perceptions of place identity in Misurata. The other point raised by a significant number of respondents in the interviews was to enhance the street facilities such as pavements, signs, and street furniture. This point was further elaborated on by interviewees who felt that the infrastructure could make a significant contribution to developing the place identity.

> 'Misurata is distinguishable by its wider streets, and its proportion and size, particularly the major roads; I am sure they followed the standards of building laws and planning guidelines regarding this part. These features can improve the infrastructure in the future, e.g. spaces for bus stops can be added, also taxi stops and other street furniture or landscape elements that can improve the urban life' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

Finally, the other point on the improvements that were raised by the majority of respondents is increasing the walkability and decreasing the number of vehicles in the city centre. In the interview, respondents were quite preoccupied with the traffic situation, especially in the area within the First Ring Road, which is often prone to congestion. The main complaint was the difficulties of using pedestrian and public spaces because people use them as car parks. The residents' aspirations of seeing a lesser presence of vehicles, using cars less often for travel in the centre especially for short walkable destinations and more car

parks could be seen as a natural response to a problem that was of major concern to them. The problems of traffic congestion that concerned certain respondents implied that vehicle and traffic systems are distinctive forms in influencing the daily life of Misurata, and which also affect the ways of using the public spaces. These issues are reflected in the following statements:

> 'I wish to see the inner city centre used only for walkers, with only residential, commercial building use and other government institutions such as admin offices, post offices, while police offices building should be transferred outside the central area, as they cause traffic jams in the city centre. Then the area within the First Ring Road should be used by pedestrians.I do not like to drive there even in outside of rush hour time, so I just park my car and walk' (PM-31 Y-020, In-depth interview, 2014).

These results, in general, suggest that meanings of place often involve a temporal dimension, reflecting the possibility for better changes. People always seek to see new developments, and thus places may acquire new meanings. In this perspective, place meanings stand forth as an ongoing process. The findings of this research are in agreement with (Low and Altman, 1992; Massey, 1991; Massey and Jess, 1995; Manzo, 2003; Smaldone et al., 2005) who described places as a dynamic ongoing process rather than fixed unnaturally in time. Therefore, it is important to see person-place relationships as temporal aspects and constantly created and recreated over time.

The underlying factors of urban change and meanings emerging in the analysis have important similarities with the factors found by Twigger-Ross and Uzzell (1996) in their study on place identity. While they emphasised how self-identity is constructed by people's use of places, for them, self-identification is a result of use distinctiveness. However, this research uses the same form of Gustation (2001), who considers distinction is about the basic human experience with places act of distinguishing places.

7.9 Chapter Conclusion

This chapter highlights identifiable place quality and characteristics that are associated with meanings and which play a significant role in defining place identity. It was found that meanings are a source of human knowledge and experience about places that they inhabitant. This is not only based on culture but it also goes beyond that, incorporating what a person knows and has experienced about a place. A particular daily activity, products, customs, actions or events that took place with family or close ones are mentioned as connotations to identify meaningful places in the city centre. These aspects were found to be important for consideration when designing places with a deep understanding of the nature of the place and how people are associated with them. The findings of this research show that the experience of the place is personally and collectively oriented, and it was evident that these life stages significantly contributed to establishing meanings. The importance of specific actions and memory that a person had in a place played an important role in forming place meanings. This confirms the theory of Manzo (2003) and Smaldone at al., (2005) that places are a dynamic phenomenon. The results also highlight that historical knowledge is a key factor, which enables meaning to be evoked through favourable associations with the past image of the city. This further underlines the importance of making a link and continuity between the past and the present. This can be achieved through a deep understanding of the historical elements and the development of lessons and vocabulary in line with the present and those which do not contradict with the past. It also confirms the theory of Gospodini (2004) that the integration between the built heritage and innovative design can be the new path to creating place identity by enhancing distinct environmental images and reducing the unfamiliar environment to the familiar. The results show that physical features become symbolic meanings as perceived by participants through important sequences of social events, past memories of the city and features that are associated with cultural values. It was discovered that likability is associated with meanings and that it varied between populations. Therefore, an urban designer should consider all socio-demography of the society and their

desirable activities in the city, for meaning of places that are associated with cultural values have the ability to increase the sense of belonging. On the other hand, urban changes were found not to be a conflicting factor in creating new meanings and place identity. This suggests that meanings can be generated from great considerations of the place as a human experience. The next chapter (Chapter Eight) will present and discuss the results that emerged from the data that are associated with the place attachment factor.

8 CHAPTER EIGHT: FACTORS INFLUENCING PLACE ATTACHMENT

8.1 Introduction

This chapter discusses the results associated with the third research question and objective. This question is:

- **How can places evoke a sense of attachment for its inhabitants?**

This question is associated with one objective:

(a) To identify factors that influence attachment to place.

Across all qualitative and quantitative analysis, the data suggested that there are several important influencing factors of place attachment, which play an important role in sustaining the place identity. From data analysis, it was found that the attachment to place could be categorised into five complementary factors: emotional attachment; functional attachment; length of residence; familiarity and engagement. To triangulate the data, the three study areas will be grouped together whereby comparisons are concurrently made amongst sample areas to identify the pattern, similarity and differences.

8.2 Factors Influencing Place Attachment

To examine the way places evoke people's sense of attachment, three types of questions were designed in the interview schedule and survey. The first is based on the level of emotional attachment to place; the second is based on the level of satisfaction associated with the functional use, and the third is based on the physical attachment. The aim is to examine the way attachment to place is formed through lived experience in a place.

As has been discussed in chapter three, the attachment to place is defined as an effective bond between a person and specific place. The effective bond, according to this research, is the qualities associated with place based on the attitude of residents towards their city. The following sections analyse the data collected.

8.2.1 Emotional Attachment

The interview data reveals that emotional attachment generally stems from the sense of love, pride and loyalty.

Table 8.1 illustrates the main indicators for the emotional attachment, as expressed by the majority of respondents.

Table 8.1: Emotional Attachment Indicators.

Aspect of attachment	Indicators
Love	I love this city because I and extended **family** live in this city. This city is **part of me.** I cannot imagine myself **living** in another city. Unwilling to move to another place as I **grew up** here. I love Misurata, simply because I was born here.
Pride	I am proud to say **I am a 'Misuraten'** (self-identity). I am proud of the **society.** I am proud of the history of the city. Proud of Misurata due to **important events and proud history.** Proud of the specialities of the traditional market. Proud of the strong **sense of community** and conservative society.
Loyalty	It is impossible to live or work permanently in other Libyan cities. Unwilling to move as I feel I am part of the society. I feel the attachment to the society rather than the city as a physical form. People love their city and cooperate to see their city at its best. I feel I am part of the conservative society. It is part of me; I grew up here and live here.

Source: Interview, (2014).

Love, pride and loyalty were frequently mentioned in the interview as reasons for emotional attachment, relating to 'rootedness'. The following statements exemplified the attachment to the city centre:

> 'When I am traveling from Tripoli to Misurata, just when entering the western gate of the city (Dafniaeh) I feel even the air itself changes. Do not ask me why or how, it is just something inside and it cannot be grasped' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

> 'I am attached to Misurata city simply because I was born in this city, grew up here, and I am living here. I know every part and corner of this city, specifically, the city centre I grew in this area and I have been living here since I was born' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

> 'I love Misurata very much and will not move out from it to live in another city for whatever reason' (PM-31 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

While many respondents stressed the emotional attachment to the city due to the length of residence and rootedness, other native respondents strongly related their emotional attachment to the sense of pride:

> 'This city has an honourable history, especially in resisting the Italian occupation' (PF-39 Y-009, In-depth interview, 2014).

Residents were also proud of their city for its recent history. Misurata was deeply and violently exposed to the bombing and siege during the events of the revolutions of the Arab Spring in 2011. However, the population did not abandon the city to other safer towns and acted as an example of solidarity and social cohesion to defend their city and liberate it from the siege. After the war, people were quick to rebuild and organise life in the city. One female respondent showed to what extent she was proud of the society of the city during that crucial time:

> 'During that time everyone in the city knew his or her specific job and what they should do; even children had their job, which could have been cleaning, women did also an amazing job cooking and sending food to the rebels on the front line, and that is why we are proud of this city and love it' (PF-39 Y-009, In-depth interview, 2014).

8.2.1.1 Degree of emotional attachment

The questionnaire results on the emotional attachment to the places showed higher positive responses. The mean values were used to analyse 5 points Likert scale in order to assess the level of emotional attachment variables.

The scales of 3.00 from the scale of 5.0, as summarised in Table 5.11, reveals that the respondents' emotional attachment to the city centre of Misurata is strong. The scale of (3.88), (3.58) and (3.15) on statements *'I feel I am a part of Misurata'*, *'I do not have any intention to move out from this city'* and *'I am very attached to this place'* confirm that the respondents were strongly attached to the city centre. Other variables such as *'I have a positive impression of the city centre'* (3.45), *'I enjoy being here more than any other place'* (3.25), and *'I do not have any intention to move out from this city'* (3.58) were highly expressed as positive indicators of the emotional attachment through comfort and loyalty.

Coming to the city centre was felt by respondents as the most satisfying thing to do, and was rated at (3.25). The statement of *'I am more attached to the traditional market more than any other place'* explains the influence of the traditional area as the main attraction of the place more than other modern shopping centres, which scored (3.11) percent. What is noted from the survey data is that although the majority of respondents showed positive responses towards all statements, the statement of *'I prefer to spend my spare time in the city centre more than other places'* indicates one of the lowest average values (2.54). This could be influenced by the lack of leisure places that meet the needs of all groups of people regardless of age or gender.

These results indicate the ability of the city centre to evoke residents' emotions through fulfilling their psychological needs i.e. enjoyment, positive impressions, unwillingness to move outside the city. These intangible features of the place sustain the essence of the place reflected in positive sentiments and emotive expressions.

Table 8.2: Degree of emotional attachment to the city centre based on mean value.

Attachment Items	Scale	Strongly agree	Agree	Neither	Disagree	Strongly disagree	Mean	Std. De
I am very attached to this place	Number	104	53	8	10	1	3.15	0.86
	Percentage	59.1%	30.1%	4.5%	5.7%	0.6%		
I am very attached to my neighbourhood more than to the city centre	Number	94	46	9	20	7	3.14	1.17
	Percentage	53.4%	26.1%	5.1%	11.4%	4%		
I have a positive impression of the city centre	Number	105	56	6	8	1	3.45	0.81
	Percentage	59.7%	31.8%	3.4%	4.5%	0.6%		
Modern buildings, which have been built recently, give me a sense of pride	Number	99	49	3	19	6	3.23	1.12
	Percentage	56.3%	27.8%	1.7%	10.8%	3.4%		
I enjoy being here more than any other places	Number	89	65	3	15	4	3.25	1.00
	Percentage	50.6%	36.9%	1.7%	8.5%	2.3%		
I feel secure being in this place	Number	102	58	5	9	2	3.41	0.86
	Percentage	58%	33%	2.8%	5.1%	1.1%		
I prefer to spend my spare time in the city centre more than other places	Number	48	64	11	41	12	2.54	1.29
	Percentage	27.3%	36.4%	6.3%	23.3%	6.8%		
I feel I am a part of Misurata	Number	159	14	2	1	0	3.88	0.40
	Percentage	90.3%	8%	1.1%	.6%	0%		
I am very attached to the traditional market more than any other place	Number	80	67	3	22	4	3.11	1.08
	Percentage	45.5%	38.1%	1.7%	12.5%	2.3%		
I do not have any intention to move out from this city	Number	138	24	0%	7	7	3.58	0.98
	Percentage	78.4%	13.6%	0%	4%	4%		

Mean value: 1= strongly disagree; 5= strongly agree. Source: Survey (2014).

The interview data reveals that a group of residents constantly attached to the city centre identified themselves as friends who gather or meet in the coffee shop every evening to share concerns and ideas. One of the respondents stated that the coffee shops scattered around the city centre are places for relaxing and communicating with others. Many people like to visit these places, especially in the evening times making them the places with the most social interaction in the city.

It was found that respondents were constantly attached to traditional markets such as Al Lefah market as a place providing them with a strong sense of belonging. One of the respondents stated that the atmosphere of the place is different from any other part of the whole city. The distinct atmosphere of the traditional market and vendors together with the social interaction contributed to this feeling. The respondents asked why they feel attached to this place received layers of explanations. One respondent stated that:

> 'It is a nice place for shopping with friends, moving around easily and away from any disturbance of cars' (PM-20 Y-013, In-depth interview, 2014).

Another respondent when asked which places in the city centre he would choose to be there said the traditional area and when asked why he stated that:

> 'The atmosphere itself in the traditional area is different, it's more enjoyable and sociable when you can walk, sit, talk and see people, even the sellers there are more friendly' (PM-31 Y-020, In-depth interview, 2014).

The initial results of the questionnaires indicate that the ability of the city centre as a vital place to meet the psychological needs of the residents has an influence on evoking emotional attachment to the place. Intangible characteristics of place such as enjoyable and sociable sustain the spirit of place (genius loci) reflected in the positive sentiments and emotion conveyed by the residents. It can be inferred that through time, place identity is established in parallel with deeper socio-cultural fusion with a place.

The overall findings suggest that places are not only a physical phenomenon but also holders of sentiments, pride, loyalty and love (Tuan, 1977). This is evident in the respondents' commitments to the potential of place in raising a sense of 'territoriality' and 'rootedness' (Arefi, 1999), producing the self and group identity.

As discussed in Chapter Three, underlying most research work on place attachment is the acceptance that attachment to place is the product of humans experiences with their environment, encouraging both love and pride, and creating an emotional bond to place, but few writers define the qualities of these emotions. In the case of Misurata, the strong social ties and pride as positive experiences are associated with place attachment and this result confirms Relph's theory (1976) that a sense of belonging together with love and loyalty for place is strongly developed attachment to place. Therefore, psychological factors that have the ability to evoke residents' emotions such as a sense of belonging, pride, love and loyalty, can promote place identity by establishing residents' identifications with a place.

8.2.2 Functional Attachment

Results from the surveys and the interviews reveal that in the context of the city centre as a place for shopping, public services, and work is the strongest form of functional attachment. Data from the in-depth interviews suggest that the functional attachment was articulated in the form of point of satisfaction (e.g., facilities provided, shops, etc.) and sense of comfort (sociable, walkable, quiet place etc.) (See Table 8.3). This indicates the nature of the city centre as supportive of the commercial and social activities.

Table 8.3: Functional Attachment Indicators.

Indicators	
Satisfaction	• Unsatisfied with car park limitation • All major shops and services are located here • Unhappy with the obstruction of cars • Satisfied with the activities occurring in Al Nasser Square • Unhappy with the new design of the central garden • Satisfied with the traditional area because it attracts a lot of people to shop • Satisfied with the variety of goods offered at low prices • Unsatisfied with poor pedestrian areas and sidewalks • Abdallah Gareibe Street is a suitable place for daily needs • Special attraction to the traditional area because it is a walkable place
The sense of comfort	• I like to sit in Stone Café in Benghazi ST; it has a nice design and it is a comfortable place • Sana street has some nice shops but has uncomfortable pedestrian areas to walk in • A traditional market is an enjoyable place • This place is simple and flexible (informal) • Shops in Sana street give a sense of formality restricted to typical fashion shops • Walkable place due to there being no cars in the traditional area • Comfortable with familiar shopping vendors and shops • Quiet environment • Accessible place

Source: Interview, (2014).

8.2.2.1 The degree of satisfaction

The respondents stress both satisfaction and dissatisfaction regarding the city centre. Satisfaction is generally articulated through existence and mixture of goods and attractions for shopping activities. Most notably, the respondents are generally pleased with choice and diversity of shops in the city centre.

'Abdallah Garied Street has been developed nicely to include complex shopping malls with a variety of things, and also within the street you can find a variety of services such as markets, restaurants, children's goods and so on. Everything for everyone i.e. from new-born babies, children/ toddlers, youth, men, women, mothers care to elderly people's goods can be found in this street' (MF-38 Y- 009).

Other respondents indicated the significance of the intensity of walkers in supporting their attachment to the city centre:

'The atmosphere itself in the traditional area is different, it's more enjoyable and sociable when you can walk, sit, talk and see many walkers around, even the sellers here are more friendly' (PM-31 Y-020, In-depth interview, 2014).

'I like the traditional market very much; even if I have no intention to buy anything, when I visit the city centre I must visit this place frequently for a walk and seeing people' (PF-26 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

8.2.2.2 The sense of comfort

The sense of comfort is reflected in the places that encourage and support the walkability and social interaction in the city centre. It was found that respondents were consistently attached to traditional markets such as Al Lefah market as a place providing them with a comfortable place to enjoy shopping. One of the respondents stated that the atmosphere of the place is different from any other part of the city. The distinct atmosphere of the traditional market and vendors together with the social interaction contributed to this feeling. The respondents asked why they feel so attached to this place received layers of explanations. One respondent stated that:

'It is a nice place for shopping with friends, moving around easily and a way from any disturbance of cars' (PM-20 Y-013, In-depth interview, 2014).

This sense of comfort in the traditional was not found in the female respondents' comments. Misurata, like other Libyan cities, is a conservative community, which is influenced by Islamic religious principles, so there is a need to use the public spaces in the city separately between the genders. For example, one woman comments that:

'I feel I do not belong in Sana Street as most visitors there are men' (PF-25 Y-018, In-depth interview, 2014).

Another woman stated:

'I never went to the traditional area since I grew up because the stores are very close to each other and the narrow streets mean walking through can mean touching other walkers, and it is uncomfortable' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

In the same way, another female suggests that:

'Indeed in the city centre there should be clubs and cafes for women, so they can communicate in the city centre, otherwise, there are only a few places where women can visit and enjoy' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

8.2.2.3 Degree of functional attachment

Questions regarding the functional attachment to the places generally indicated more positive responses. Table 8.4 summarises the mean values and percentages of scales, which indicate more than average scores. The respondents agreed that the shopping in the city centre is the best place for their needs (3.44), the most lively spot in the city (3.75), a good choice of facilities and goods in the city centre (3.42). However, other indicators such as this place are more comfortable than other places, and many temporary activities occurred there, a place well-known for selling traditional goods. It has street vendors scored at a lower rate (2.03 to 2.82), which reflects the negative responses. This indicates the residents that functional attachment is an important factor to strengthen ties between people and places.

Table 8.4: Degree of functional attachment to the city centre based on mean value.

Attachment Items	Scale	Strongly agree	Agree	Neither	Disagree	Strongly disagree	Mean	Std. Dev.
All goods needed are here (OPTIONS)	Number	121	37	1	10	7	3.44	1.04
	Percentage	68.8%	21%	0.6%	5.7%	4%		
The liveliest spot in Misurata (liveability)	Number	136	37	2	1	0	3.75	0.49
	Percentage	77.3%	21%	1.1%	0.6%	0%		
Many temporary activities occur here (activity)	Number	52	93	4	24	3	2.94	1.01
	Percentage	29.5%	52.8%	2.3%	13.6%	1.7%		
Good facilities are provided (facility)	Number	103	58	2	13	0	3.42	0.84
	Percentage	58.5%	33%	1.1%	7.4%	0%		
The best place for shopping (best)	Number	91	61	3	13	8	3.21	1.09
	Percentage	51.7%	34.7%	1.7%	7.4%	4.5%		
Well-known as a place for selling traditional goods (types)	Number	67	64	5	28	12	2.82	1.28
	Percentage	38.1%	36.4%	2.8%	15.95	6.8%		
More choices are available here (options)	Number	106	50	5	10	5	3.56	0.98
	Percentage	60.2%	28.4%	2.8%	5.7%	2.8%		
It has street vendors (activity)	Number	30	58	6	53	29	2.03	1.40
	Percentage	17%	33%	3.4%	30.1%	16.5%		
I feel comfortable being here (comfort)	Number	40	65	7	37	27	2.31	1.42
	Percentage	22.7%	36.9%	4%	21%	15.3%		
It has high quality of goods (options)	Number	98	55	6	15	2	3.31	0.96
	Percentage	55.7%	31.3%	3.4%	8.5%	1.1%		

Mean value: 1= strongly disagree 5= strongly agree. Source: Survey, (2014).

It can be understood that the city centre is successful as a shopping attraction and therefore provides suitable and strategic places for working and trading. Even though some qualities of the place attachment, as shown in Table 5.6, had a lower percentage of agreement with regards to functional use, it is interesting to note that it had been perceived as a distinctive and important place by most respondents. It was observed that the distinctiveness of the city centre could be associated with the attraction of commercial activities occupying the city centre and the options of desired goods. These results suggest that residents were attached to certain places in the city centre based on the desired function and use. Based on the data shown in Table 8.4, it is evident that the importance of the city centre is strongly related to the economic and shopping dependency factor.

However, the result also indicates that the importance of the city centre is not seen just as a place for commercial activities but also as a place for social interaction. This is evident in the high average of value (3.75) that was given to the statement 'the liveliest spot in Misurata'. These findings reaffirm the findings in

the interview that strongly supported social life and leisure activities and thus people functionally attached to it.

The overall findings of this research suggest that the attachment to the city centre is strongly raised by the functional characteristics. The functional attachment to the city centre is related to the potential of a place in being dependable, satisfying and meeting individuals' desires and daily needs as well as the provision of comfortable environments that support the desired related activities. The city centre is the best choice for supporting their daily needs, shopping activities, and some streets are important due to their dependence for personal needs (e.g., Sana Street functionally defers with the Abdallah Garieb Street). It is evident that the role of the traditional area in supporting social interaction increases the attachment to it. It can, therefore, be concluded that the qualities linked with the prevailing function of a place (e.g., land use, building use, diversity of shops, cafes, public facilities) strongly influence the form of attachment. This supports the findings from other researchers that place attachment is developed when the environment fulfils a functional need or a goal of the society (Stokols and Shumaker, 1981; Stedman, 2002). In this case, enhancing the functional use of place in reference to the social needs can be a basic platform to strengthen the attachment to place and ultimately sustain the place identity.

8.2.3 Length of Residence

Place engagement is the act of being involved in a particular activity in a particular place, and place engagement can be associated to the length of residence. Figure 8.1 below illustrates the summary statistics for the length of engagement of the residents with Misurata. The result shows that 90% of the respondents are local residents, who were born in the city, and thus have a strong length of residence in the city.

The results indicate that just 2% out of the total respondents have lived in the city for a period of 8 years and another 8% have lived there between 14-39 years, which can be considered as a long-term engagement with a place. Nevertheless, qualitative and quantitative evidence has shown that local residents who were born in the place and whose family resided in the city for many generations contributed strongly to a sense of belonging and attachment to place.
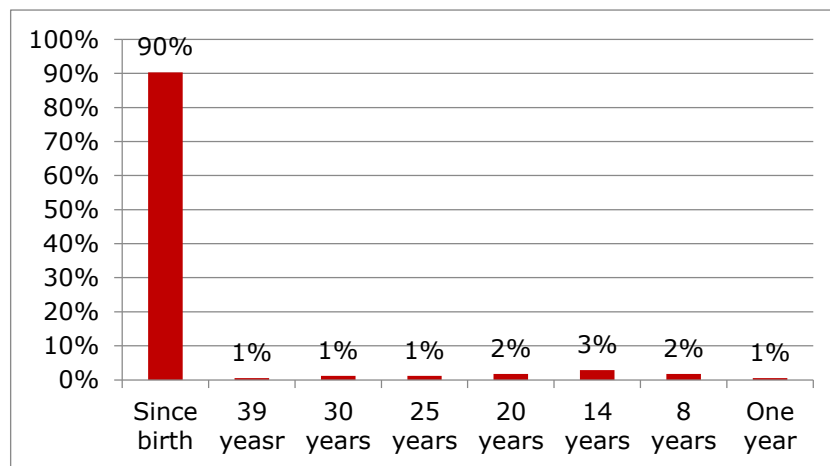
Figure 8.1: Length of engagement to Misurata. Source: Survey (2014).

Respondents relate their knowledge to the place attachment in light of the length of residence and family rooted to the place. The majority of respondents when asked why they felt attached to Misurata, said:

> 'I am attached to Misurata because it is my city, the place where I was born and grew up; I study here, my family are here and my friends' (PM-26 Y-012, In-depth interview, 2014).

What is worth noting is that respondents who were not native also showed a strong attachment to the city due to fusion in the society and building in relation with the place during the stages of their life.

> '…what makes me attached to the city is not its building or streets i.e. the city itself, but rather I feel proud I am part of the society. People love their city and like to see it always clean and organised. The sense of community gives me the attachment to the city and makes me part of it' (PM-31 Y-003, In-depth interview, 2014).

> 'Misurata is not my original place of birth but it is the city where I grew up and lived during the best time of my life. It is a special city for me. I know this city, its locality, its character and its society' (PM-31 Y-021, In-depth interview, 2014).

These findings suggested that the attachment to the city is associated strongly with the length of residence for original residence and long-term residence. In accordance with previous research, local habitation can develop a stronger sense of attachment to a place, because they evaluate the real sense of community (Hay, 1998; Harlan et al., 2005; Lewicka, 2011). These findings also confirm that places become meaningful because of ones' relationship with other people living there, family, parents, grandparents, friends, relatives and as the sense of community that such social relations create. These findings is with agreement with Gustafson, (2001) assumption of self-others in creating meaningful places.

Emotional attachment is deeply associated with the meaning that arises from the strong and long attachment between a person and a place. 90% of respondents had lived in the city since their birth and 10% of respondents had lived in the city as long term residents (between 5 to 40 years) and had emotional responses to the place. This indicates that time is an important predictor for place attachment as a fusion with the community develops the relationship between people and places. This is evident when one non-native respondent stressed a strong attachment to the city as she had a lot of childhood memories in it. In this regard, Lewicka (2008) pointed out that memory is a 'glue' that connects people to their places. The respondent (PM-31 Y-021, In-depth interview, 2014) showed strong local knowledge and sense of community based upon long-term residence and not as a native resident i.e. 'place as a root'. This corresponds with Gustafson (2002), who stated that 'place as a root' reflects a deeper understanding of attachment to a home. These suggest that not only the rootedness determines the strength of attachment (Relph, 1976; Manzo, 2003), but also long time engagement with place can generate a strong sense of belonging to a place.

8.2.4 Familiarity

Respondents were asked about the most familiar places in the city centre based on their constant visiting, knowledge and recognition. Results from the

questionnaires as shown in Table 8.2 indicate that almost all of the respondents are very familiar with the streets that are shopping spots more so than other specific buildings or open spaces.

8.2.4.1 Familiarity and legibility

It is noticeable from the results that all the streets were familiar because they are the most visited places for shopping purposes. This suggests the engagement with a place on a daily basis and frequently visiting a place increases the familiarity with that place. However, Tripoli Street was the highest percentage (67.5%) not because of the multitude of shops in it, but because of the legibility as a major street accessing the core of the city centre. People use this street on a daily basis to connect other city's parts and streets. Therefore, as they pass by this street they become very familiar with it. This result highlights therefore that there is a relationship between familiarity and legibility.
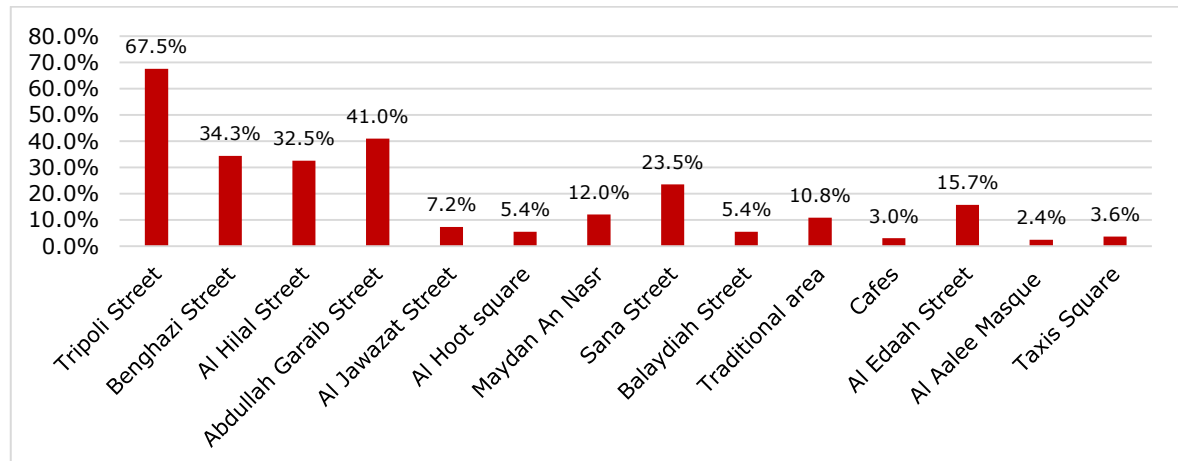
Figure 8.2: Most familiar places in the city centre of Misurata. Source: Survey, (2014).

8.2.4.2 Familiarity and Engagement

Based on the in-depth interviews, familiarity is the aspect most frequently mentioned by the respondents when asked about the reason why they visit a

certain place in the city centre. One such response was from a woman who has lived long term in Misurata:

> 'I feel attached to Al Hilal Street because I am very familiar with it. It is a ten minute walk from the place where I live in Benghazi Street' (PF-24 Y-022, In-depth interview, 2014).

The results showed that there is a significant correlation between familiarity and frequency of visiting the city centre. According to Gustafson (2001), frequent visits increase the level of familiarity with the setting. Respondents associated their familiarity with the shopping locations, which they normally visited and functioned as fulfilling their needs. The following responses describe this connection:

> 'I feel familiar with the traditional area where a range of goods is offered with good deals and prices. All the types of clothes are offered here, including T-shirts, shoes, jeans, sports clothes and so on. Cafes and restaurants also can be found. I often come here, at least once a month for shopping, for sure in the Eid times; I can find all the necessities for my family and me. The best is traditional clothing, especially Caatt, wand I always come to this area to buy new clothes for Eid' (PM-20 Y-013, In-depth interview, 2014).

The shoppers also associated their familiarity with the locations of shops as attractions to fulfil a particular need. The following responses describe the connection:

> 'I frequently visit Abdallah Garieb Street for shopping. I can find all necessities for my family. The best clothing shops are here' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

Another respondent showed strong familiarity with Abdallah Gareib Street as the most favourite place for her to shop. When she was asked if she could identify herself in this street with blind eyes she said:

> 'I could easily recognise myself in this street, walking through it, I would have a feeling of where I am standing, many restaurants introducing foods in the evening in the front the shops so smells of food, the active frontage in this street make a lot of things to sense. Believe me, in this street, I can feel the floor and the steps along its pedestrian walkway' (PF-25 Y-017, In-depth interview, 2014).

The respondents associated familiarity with past memory with the city centre as described in the following statements:

> 'From a long time ago, when I was a child, I used to visit the photography shop on Sana Street, so I have memories in this street, and when I am in this street the many memories come to my mind' (PM-26 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

8.2.4.3 Variation in familiarity according to gender

Notably, it was found that women were less familiar with the city centre compared to the men because their frequency of visits was lower than men's. Figure 8.3 shows the summary statistics for the respondents engaged on a daily, weekly and monthly basis. The highest percentage was given to the daily engagement, while other residents had indicated weekly, monthly and yearly engagement. The result also shows that there is a noticeable difference between men and women in the length of engagement with the city centre. Male respondents indicated the highest percentage of daily engagement (76%), while females indicated a lower daily engagement rated at (42%) and showed higher frequency for weekly, monthly and yearly engagement. This indicates that women in Misurata have a lesser engagement with the city centre compared to the men. This can be associated with the cultural context, in which shopping activities, working and driving belong to the men who are responsible for the family, for earning money and supporting his wife and family. This result confirms that the more the engagement with the place, the more the familiarity can be developed.
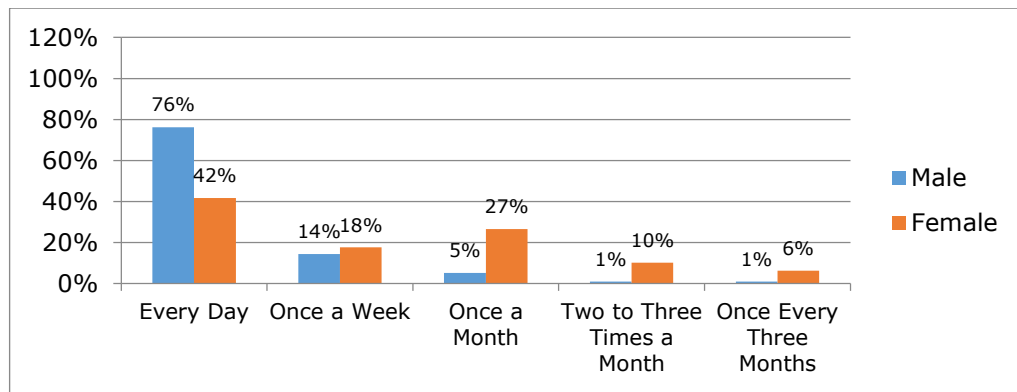
Figure 8.3: Frequency of engagement. Source: Survey, (2014).

However, some places are more familiar to female more than male as they often visit by women such as Abdallah Greibe Street. Many respondents in the interview stressed that they know most shops in this street but for the traditional area and Sana Street were mostly unfamiliar for women and familiar for men.

The findings of this research suggest that one important aspect was found to be restricted to Misurata context as one functional needs as underlying the place attachment is the autonomy. Autonomy is the desire and ability to engage in appropriation; an optimal level of internal and external stimulation; and place congruence (Fuhrer & Kaiser's, 1992). Misurata as other Libyan cities is a conservative community, which influenced by Islamic religious principles, respondents stressed that there is a need to use the public spaces in the city separately between genders. In parallel with Ujang and Zakariya (2015a), these findings confirm the importance of socio demographic characteristics as an appropriate tool and measurement in defining the roles of the actual values of a place. In this case, it can be said that considered socio-cultural factor of a place will contribute to stronger attachment to place and thus the continuity of personal and cultural identity can be preserved.

8.2.4.4 *Familiarity and cognition*

As stated in chapter 2, familiarity is formed by feelings and cognitions that people had established through their life experience with a place. By adopting Nasar (2005), and Green's (2010) technique of photo recognition, in a more

challenging way, in the interview respondents were asked to identify places that were drawn briefly with detailed pictures on a piece of paper. This was evident during the pilot study on perception when people were asked to identify places on the coloured slides and all respondents easily managed this, even if those pictures did not include any well-known buildings. Figure 8.4 shows some sketches used in the field study in order to assess the level of familiarity of place.
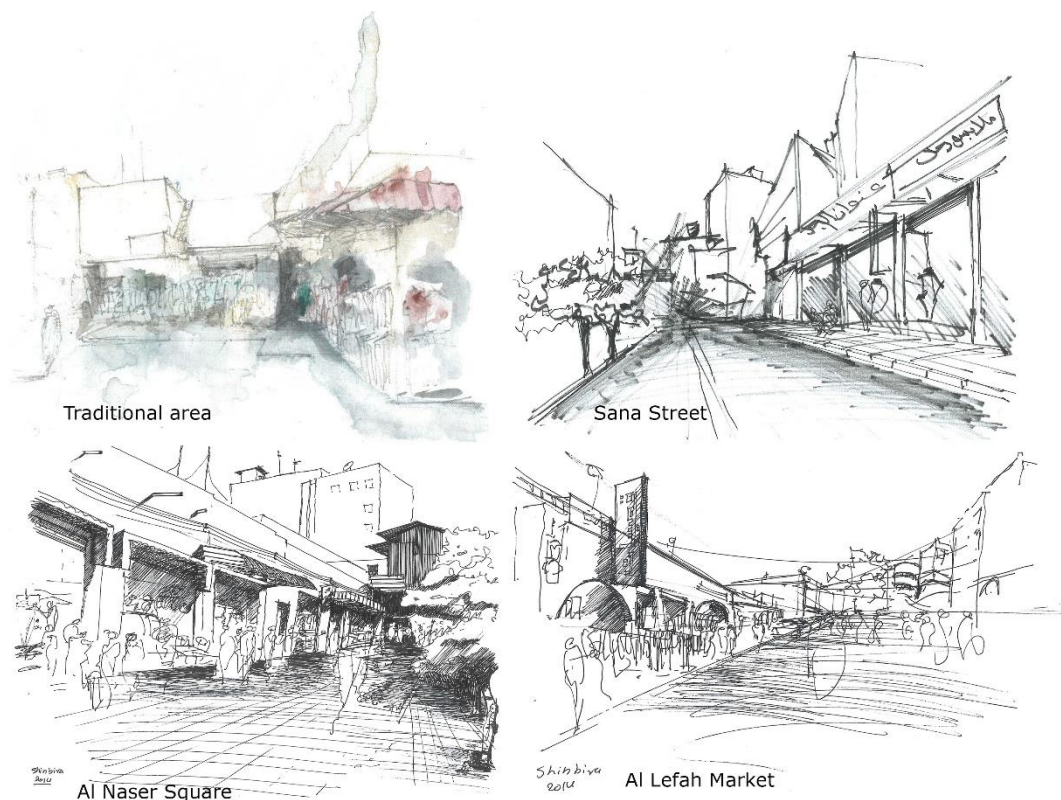
Figure 8.4: Sketch recognition used to measure the degree of familiarity. Source: The author, (2014).

Interestingly, the majority of respondents were able to identify Al Nasser Square, Lefah market, inside the traditional area and Sana Street. Only two female respondents could not identify the traditional area because they were unfamiliar with it. Respondents showed strong familiarity with these places, as they even referred to the only vendor spot activities that could be found in the inner city centre.

The overall findings suggest familiar places that residents came to know during their life experience with that place contributed to the place attachment. Places that are commonly visited by people become more familiar to the residents (Minardi et al, 1990), which are emotionally and functionally experienced by them. Based on the evidence currently available, it seems fair to suggest that familiar places contribute to developing a sense of attachment to places. This can be linked to findings from other scholars on the influence of frequent visits in strengthening place attachment (Hay, 1998; Moore and Graefe, 1994, Riley, 1992; Gustafson, 2001).

In addition, it can be claimed that familiarity and legibility can link with the cognition factor, whilst it has also been discovered that familiarity and legibility are related to the visual recognition. This is in line with Lynch's (1984) theory that intense familiarity will create a sense of place. It was found that women have lesser familiarity with the city centre as a whole when compared to men as result of the frequency of visits. It can, therefore, be inferred that frequency of visits is an important factor in the construction of the attachment to that place, which makes it distinctive and meaningful to the users.

8.2.5 Engagement and Attachment

This theme is divided into three categories: the purpose of engagement, elements of attraction and types of place most frequently visited.

8.2.5.1 Purpose of Engagement

The residents associated their city with several purposes, and the majority of the respondents engaged in shopping activities, working and other social purposes. This emphasised the dominant role of the city centre as a shopping centre as well as a commercial and working area. Results from the survey shown in Figure 8.5 indicates that the city centre was more significant in terms of commercial and shopping activities, in and less seen as a place for

entertainment. In addition, the city centre seems to act as a meeting place where people usually like to sit together in cafes and other public spaces.
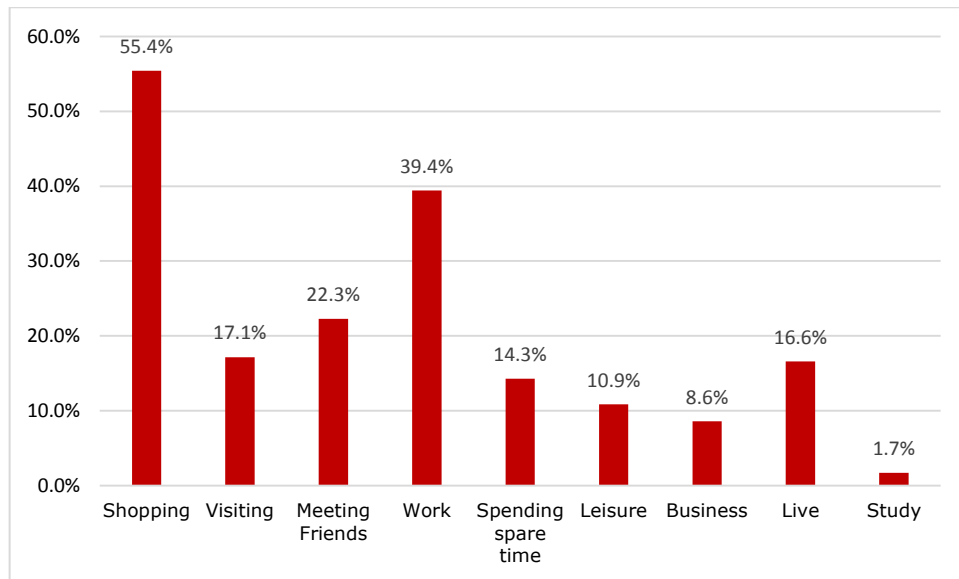
Figure 8.5: Purpose of engagement. Source: Survey, (2014).

The shopping streets, Al Nasser square, Al Hoot Square (which has weekly second hand car market), traditional area and cafes were seen by respondents as significant in the respondents' reasons for being there. From the site observation, these places were found to be the most active areas where selling and buying activities occurred with multi-types of shops and some vendors nearby Nasser square. Other goods offered on the pedestrian areas in front of the shops attract shoppers to come and buy providing types of engagement and defining the atmosphere of the places. Traditional textiles, clothing, accessories, perfume, jewellery, fast food stalls/cafes, vendors, mobile and shoe shops were the dominant types of engagement defining the character of the city centre within the First Ring Road district. These results suggest that the diversity of shops and goods are a key factor for visiting the city centre.

8.2.5.2 Elements of Attraction

The options that places can offer to attract people to engage reflects the sort of attachment to a place. Based on the survey and common to all cases, the

most attractions of the city centre are the shopping activities and other public services.

Figure 8.6 summarises the element of attraction to the city centre according to the respondents' choices. The landscape features were the lowest value of attraction. The main element of attraction to the city centre is the shopping activities (61.9%); this is followed by the public facilities (25%). Coffee shops as meeting points also found to be the main feature attract residents to visit the city centre (18.2%). The factors i.e. the choice of attractive elements were associated with the intention of being in the city centre. This suggests that more attractive features that support being in a place, a greater attachment to a place can be developed. Hence, it can be argued that the harmony between function and physical element in attracting users plays an important role in creating a distinct character.
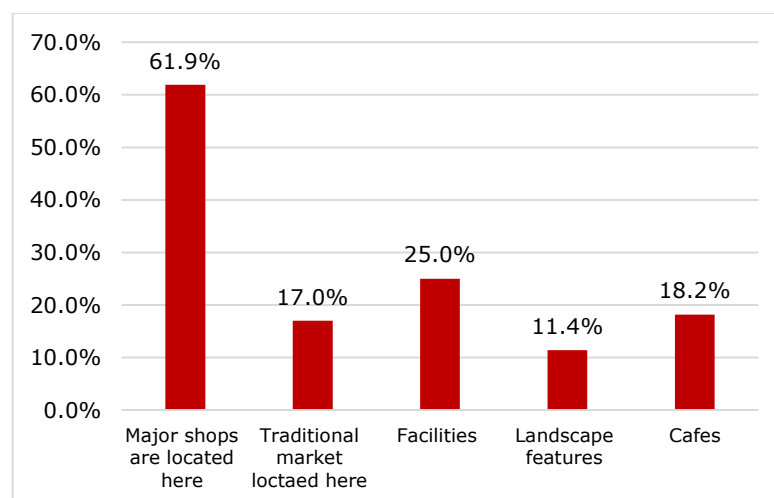
Figure 8.6: Main elements of attraction in the city centre of Misurata. Source: Survey, (2014).

All types of shops and shopping areas in the city centre are places for attraction for the majority of the respondents due to the influence of the variety of shops located alongside Abdallah Garieb Street, Al Mamore Complex, Al Nasser vendors, and others. The other type of attraction is the cafes and other public

services. Nevertheless, the interview results also indicate that the most common types of attraction for men are shops, cafes, restaurants, working places and traditional market, while the favoured types of attractions for female respondents were mostly shops, especially for women who wanted to buy items for their children.

It was observed that despite the emergence of new shopping centres scattered around the city centre, the traditional area including Al Nasser Square and Lefah old market were still considered the most attractive places for shopping, particularly in Eid and Ramadan times. The traditional pattern of the transaction and the way in which goods were displayed characterised the image of the places. This was obviously expressed by the following comments:

> 'The traditional area has the greater advantage in terms of users' attraction due to it being a quiet place away from the noise of the street traffic, and you can hear people talking and chatting, all kinds of clothes, shoes, jewelry and other goods offered at a good price' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

However, female respondents felt that the traditional area and Al Nasser Square were not an attractive place because they were crowded with men and they did not feel comfortable to walk very close to them through the narrow passages. Instead, they prefer other streets such as Abdallah Garieb Street where the presence of wider pedestrian areas and shopping windows exist.

> 'I often visit Abdallah Garieb ST, because this street is always crowded with people. I mean I feel comfortable, particularly at Eid time its vitality gives a nice kind of atmosphere in this street' (PM-28 Y-004, In-depth interview, 2014).

It was observed that the choices of traditional area ranged from domestic products to clothing and suited the users' needs, being extensively available and at reasonable prices. In addition, the selling of fashionable imitation goods has long been an acceptable practice in Sana Street or Abdallah Garieb Street.

In both cases, the result showed that the variety of shops, street vendors, and activities play an important role in the element of attraction to residents. It is evident that the role of informal trade in Al Nasser Square is one of the most

significant factors influencing respondents' attraction, but more so for men than for women. This may be because of the influence of culture on the use of public spaces by both genders. In summary, the role of diversity in cultural activities is very important in supporting attachment to the place, in which the sociocultural interaction helps to develop the sense of attachment. It was found that the respondents attached to a particular place due to a specific element of attraction that fulfil their needs or desirable activities. This can be associated with the meanings constructed in the residents' experience, which supports the idea that person or group engagement with space gives it meaning as 'place' at least to the extent of differentiating it from other places (Lynch, 1960).

It was found that despite the influence of modern shops along Sana Street and Abdallah Street in respondents' choice of shops, the popularity of Al Nasser Square and traditional vendor areas attract people to visit them regularly. The role of the sense of community and locality is very important in supporting attachment to the city centre.

8.2.5.3   *Type of Places Most Frequently Visited*

Places consist of predominant types of buildings use and public spaces located within the city centres. The major elements in the city centre of Misurata are the shops, cafes, public servers such as banks and administrations offices, vendors in Nasser Square and the traditional market within the core of the city centre.
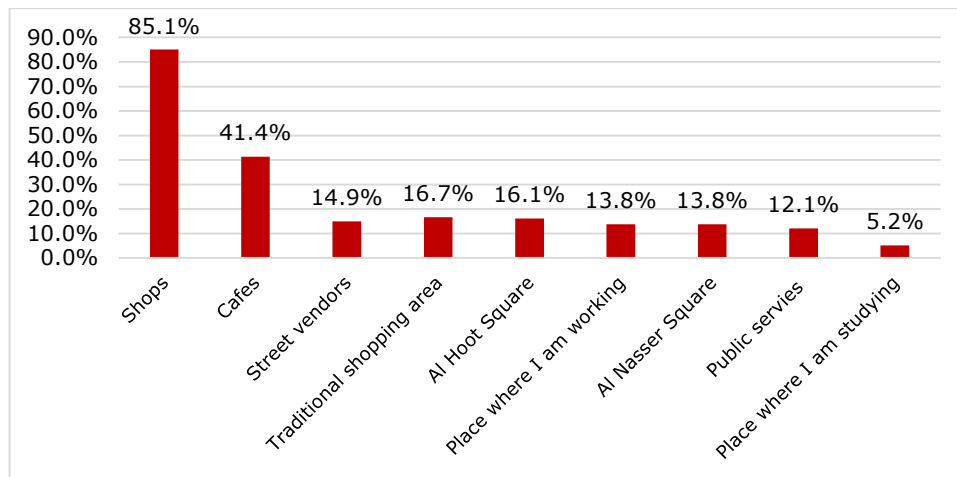
Figure 8.7: The most frequently visited types of places in the city centre. Source: Survey, (2014).

Despite the popularity of the traditional area and Nasser Square, other shops located in Sana Street, Al Hilala Street and Abdullah Street are the most frequently visited types of shops owing to the variety of types of shops and shopping centres located in them selling a wide variety of products. However, results from the interview revealed that the most enjoyable frequently visited type of shop in the city centre is the traditional market such as Al Lefah market.

The traditional quarter area makes a significant contribution to shaping the distinct image of the city centre. Results indicate the role of existing survival of the historic district in the city centre of Misurata and the element of attraction to the residents is evident. It is also evident that the traditional quarter is the most significant in influencing the resident's perception as the most engaging place compared to other surrounding modern shopping streets such as Sana Street and Abdullah Garieb Street.

> 'I like shopping in the traditional area because there are many walkers, vendors provide reasonable prices with good quality,…I enjoy shopping in this place and it reminds me of some childhood memories when I used to come here with my father - for me the most interesting place' (PF-25 Y-019, In-depth interview, 2014).

The overall findings suggest that despite the influence of the inclusion of a variety of shops situated in the major streets on residents' choice of shops, the popularity of traditional quarters attracts people not only from a shopping area

but also as a sociable and enjoyable place to walk and watch. This suggests that the role of the physical features that support and increase walkability is very important in promoting attachment to a place through increasing the sense of community and familiarity, while the sociocultural interaction contributes in developing the sense of belonging to the place.

It could be said that participants in this study showed a greater level of engagement and enjoyment in places that were much familiar and sociable i.e. when they felt a sense of community support and provide a sense of belonging. The examples given illustrate the importance of place interaction in forming attachment to place.

8.3   Chapter Conclusion

This chapter highlights the identifiable place quality and characteristics that are associated with place attachment and which play significant roles in defining place identity. The research was primarily designed to identify the factors of the built environment that influence people's perceptions that are capable of evoking emotional reactions. The results of the study show that attachment to the city centre was strongly formed by the emotional, functional, emotional, and social attributes. The emotional attachment was expressed by the respondents through the emotional response, sentiments, sense of pride and belonging. This same emotional attachment was driven by long term association and active involvement in the city and with the establishment of social rootedness with the city.

The functional attachment to the city centre was associated with the satisfaction and comforts i.e. the degree of place in satisfying person's daily needs as well as providing settings that support the desired activities. The city centre was perceived by the majority of participants as the best choice in supporting their shopping activities, work, and personal needs. It can be inferred that settings that support desired activities have a greater impact on attachment to place than the potential of the physical elements itself.

In agreement with previous studies (Gustafson, 2002 and Lewicka, 2008), the results of this study suggest that long-term residents develop a stronger attachment to place. However, it also goes beyond this as non-native residents could also develop a strong attachment to a place by shared values with the society, which translated into the sense of belonging and which was influenced by the length of engagement. The results show that comfortable, legibility and involvement increase the degree of familiarity of place, which significantly develops the attachment to place. The data analysis suggests that residents establish their familiarity with place through their experience with activities and people associated with them. It was also found that familiarity is driven by the inner comfort of being in a place. The interviews conducted revealed that a strong level of engagement with a place has contributed to evoking a sense of attachment. This was described by the pattern of engagement based on the daily associations, attractions, and frequency of visits. The traditional values of the area as the earliest shopping locations in the city evoked personal and shared meanings based on the fact that the majority of respondents were able to identify features associated with local products that reflect a sense of belonging.

The variation between men and women in their perceptions of the city centre was found to be significant in the construction of attachment towards places. Places that were found to be enjoyable and interesting by male participants evoked different attitudes in the women who saw the same places as uncomfortable. The present research concludes that the role of public spaces in providing a suitable environment for society has a significant contribution to the place attachment, and therefore, should be considered in the design of urban places, especially when redevelopment is one of the options.

The research has established the significance of place attachment as a psychological factor in the design of public spaces and urban places due to its substantial contribution to sustaining place identity. The following chapter presents the conclusion of the research in accordance with the research aim and objectives.

9   CHAPTER NINE: THE CONCLUSION

9.1   Introduction

This chapter presents the summary of the main findings and conclusion of the research. The findings are discussed in light of the research questions and objectives established for this research. This chapter is divided into six sections. The first section presents the critical analysis of the key findings of the research. The second section highlights the contribution of the research to urban design filed and practice. It is followed by discussion the limitations of the study. In the fifth section, a recommendation is made for possible and further research into the subject area. The final section presents the general conclusion to the research.

9.2   Main Findings of the Research

Overall, this project was undertaken to strengthen the idea that place identity is a production of humans' experience with places, which is constructed over time and appears to build up particular meanings and ultimately, attachment to that particular place at a particular time. It seeks *'to identify the influencing factors of place attributes, meanings, and place attachment in maintaining place identity'*. Thus, it was assumed that features of the built environment that were distinctive and remembered by people, qualities that evoke people's meanings, and place attachment, would be identifiable qualities of urban places associated with the place identity.

The following sections discuss the key findings of the research. The research has established the importance of the integration between physical environments (as an objective matter) and the psychological dimensions i.e. meninges and place

attachment (as a subjective quality embodied to place attributes) in sustaining place identity in our contemporary cities.

9.2.1 The Significance of Perceiving Physical Characteristics in Defining Place Identity

The first question aimed to explore the most distinctive quality of place that has the ability to evoke residents' perceptions. In this regard, the findings from chapter six suggest eight physical characteristics and attributes associated with place identity in Misurata. Those place qualities include imageability; visual quality; legibility; liveability; diversity; transparency and active frontages; and walkability are the most significant characteristics that were identified as contributing to sustaining place identity. The findings confirm that the potential of the physical components in the creation of better places (Steadman, 2003).

The imageability is one of the important components of place that influence people's perceptions. This links to the argument that imageable places enable to evoke people's perceptions about them and create impressions (Ewing et al., 2006). It was found that strategic location, accessibility, good connectivity, identifiable nodes, landmarks, a clear sense of direction and permeability play an important role in enhancing the urban image and increasing the capability of the city centre to evoke people's perceptions and create impressions (Ewing et al., 2006). The historic buildings, traditional façade and the old market identified as most popular landmarks and attract people into the inner core of the city center and increase the imageability. Sheik Mosque, Al Lefah Market the Historical Castel Building is regarded as the most identifiable landmarks in the city centre. In this regards, while Lynch (1960) relates the imageability to clear physical elements and sense of orientation, the findings support the significance of meanings embodied by the physical settings in influencing the recognizing urban image (Relph, 1976; Damayanti, 2015).

The city centre as a core of any city requires careful planning and design in terms of order, coherence, simplicity, and making a place easily identifiable. Direct

accessibility and visibility help to determine the legibility of the urban places. The findings of this research confirm the importance of legibility in making more attractive public realms in order to enhance the place identity.

The findings discussed in Chapter Six suggest that the majority of respondents sensibly enabled to identify the tangible and intangible characteristics of the city center. It is evident that the majority of the respondents felt that nice building's façade, consistent buildings height, scale and proportion of the streets and narrowing streets that provide a sense of enclosure have positive impressions and attract them to visit. This finding confirmed the previous studies that suggest aesthetic appearance is part of perceptions and cognition in which provides a certain information about the use and interpret the environment (Nasar, 1998 & Carmona, et. al,. 2010). The in depth interview results reveal that vibrant places that support locale activities and have a stronger sense of community such as traditional area have the capability to evoke people's other senses not only the visions but hearing, smelling and tactility. This suggests that non-visual quality play an important role in manifesting the sense of place and creating distinctive features especially when there is a lack of other physical elements e.g., well designed, performed and maintained. This suggests that there is a need to consider both tangible and intangible features of the environment in design and development processes (Ouf, 2008).

In this research, it was discovered that there is a direct link between the physical elements and the livability. The result in chapter 6 indicated that the lack of physical features such as improper paving sidewalks and lack of well-maintained flooring, inadequate street furniture and public services and lack of care and clearness deteriorate decline the liveability. The findings of this research support the result of previous studies about livable streets such as that by Mahmoudi et al. (2015) who found that the problems of physical quality strongly affect the livability of city centre streets and public spaces. The findings of this research suggest that good landscaping design and the inclusion of landscape features (e.g., trees, suitable street furniture, seating, shelter, facilities for disabled people) are

important for the quality of liveability, which creates attractive places. These findings reinforce the research of Layne (2009) cited in Mahmoudi et al. (2015, p. 105), which revealed landscape features' importance in urban spaces. This confirms that the enhancement in landscape features such as pedestrian pavements, potted plants, and avenues of trees planted along streets and other public spaces should apply in the city centre of Misurata in order to provide comfortable and attractive spaces to promote urban liveability. Another issue was found and influence the liveability is the car congestion. In contemporary cities in Libya, in this study, streets have been planned to sort out the traffic movement and congestion rather than for pedestrians or city life. In Misurata, the function of streets mostly restricted to ensuring efficient vehicular traffic flows. The findings show that the giving the priority to use the car inside the city center provides an uncomfortable environment and decreases the livability and makes it less vibrant place.

Diversity in mixed use buildings and verity of activities along streets was found to be one advantage in enhancing place quality through increasing the chance of encountering people within the public spaces. In addition, within the traditional quarter, diversity of retail and types of shops, goods choices, options in prices and street vendors found commonly in the traditional spaces encourages people to engage and interact with the place. In line to several previous studies, including Gehl (1987), Montgomery (2007), and Jacobs (2010), the present research strengthens the idea that diversity is one of the place qualities that contribute to better urban space.

As such a unique locale character should be considered by the locale authority as a good opportunity that can inspire the future urban revitalisation or regeneration schemes. These findings confirm that diversity is reflected physically and socially and also suggest that enhancing the mixture of land use at street level and promoting activity patterns of urban spaces improves the quality of city life. Within the city centre as core business district for any city, increasing types of buildings, land use and activities reducing the similarity and leading to a positive impact on the diversity of places.

Activity has been regarded as an important factor in promoting continues place attraction. It was found that the active frontage and transparency that take place along pedestrian and traditional areas with the isolation of car movement were the most important reasons for engagement in the space, as they encourage people to pause and watch. At this point, indeed, the traditional area with narrowing alleys, vendors and shopping activities is found as the most vibrant and attractive place in terms of social interactions and supporting other related activities. This also includes the active frontage and the façade transparency such as that occurred along Abduallah Garieb Street and Al Hilal Street particularly in Eid's times provide vibrant atmosphere through people and activities. Hence, the findings of this research suggest that public activities that occurred on streets and open spaces are key elements in promoting city life and increasing its vitality at day and night times. This finding can be related to Gehl's (1987) suggestion that human activity shapes the environment.

It is also evident that the attributes associated with walkability have the most significance in the residents' perceptions and increase the sense of place. It was also shown in Chapter 6 that the congestion of traffic and car parking in the city centre has a negative impact on the walkability and were the most common reasons for making the central area less attractive for walking. Hence, walkability of the city should be increased through adopting traffic calming schemes by reducing the traffic congestion in the inner core of the city centre. Furthermore, the control of traffic congestion can be reached through transforming the First Ring Road into a 'transit mall', which only permits public transportation and services, but not private cars. This is consistent with the proposal made by Robert Matthew and Partners (1982) who recommended that the area of the First Ring Road should be controlled and restricted to pedestrians.

Permeability and porosity are notably important, as they create a comfortable environment for walkability, which is found to be the most important factor in shaping people's perceptions and increasing the sense of place. Specifically, in the inner city centre (e.g., traditional area and its surrounding area) where the streets

become shorter and narrower, the notion of porosity is relevant to walkability. Specifically, shortcuts of appropriate street scale and proportion (human scale) provide an encouraging space for walking by allowing people to weave their way from one shop to another as well as providing an interactive micro urban pattern with one-story shops on both sides enriching the involvement and facilitating the well-being experience in the place. The findings of this study confirm that the walkability as one of the place quality is important to be considered in designing and shaping our contemporary cities since a walkable places have significant mechanisms in making friendly places that people love to use and increases the people experience their city on foot pleasantly (Tibbalds, 1992). Reducing the car domination in the city center and enhancing the physical qualities of the environment important in the determination of making walkable places.

9.2.2 The Significance of Place Quality Associated with Meanings in Defining Place Identity

The second question was posed to explore how places can shape people's meanings. In other words, this question aims to identify the influencing factors of place that are associated with meanings (towards the subjective components of place). The following section highlights the most identifiable factors associated with meanings that emerged from the data.

Place Memory and Knowledge. The underlying dimensions of meanings emerging from the interview analysis are place memory and knowledge. Place memory and knowledge are reflected in the descriptions commonly mentioned in past memory experiences with the place. The findings of this research discovered that the majority of the respondents showed similar identifiable features and feelings that they thought had defined the place meanings. The features commonly linked to the old quarter of the city centre included the goods and products offered in the marketplace, the daily life and the general atmosphere of the place. All these features were important because they were associated with the shared memory of the city and acted as special memories of the place. Irregular activities with parents or relatives that had occurred in a place during their life path were identified as the

main reason why places meant something for them. The knowledge of the place was vividly in relation to the important memory of the individuals with the place through their past experience. This type of connection has given an intimate sense of the place, in which it evokes certain memories and thus gives meaning to the place. These findings support the theory of Gustafson (2001, p. 9) that 'places often have highly personal meanings', which is related to important actions of experience and memory. This suggests that meanings hold specific significance deriving from the important past events, activities, actions that are associated with a personal identity and present a situation that determines the identity of a place (Relph, 1976). Thus, meanings develop as a result of human experience, which in turn becomes a part of personal or social identity (Gustafson, 2000).

Historical knowledge. The findings of chapter Seven suggested that the historical knowledge of the place possessed more qualities associated with meanings and therefore, is very distinctive to the residents. From the sample survey, a higher percentage of reasons for features needing to be retained was given to the historical values. One of the significant impacts on Misurata, that has touched its very essence and identity in a negative way, is the lack of awareness and sensitivity of its built heritage by the local authority during the development process, in last four decades. The historic buildings and built heritage significance of the existing old zone as the earliest part of the city centre of Misurata evoked a lot of meaning for the residents and thus, influenced the degree of their sense of belonging to the city. It is evident that the majority of the respondents felt sad if the built heritage of the historic core is destroyed. The results of this research support the idea that authenticity of urban heritage and meanings should be one of the spotlights of attention of urban designers and city administrators. This means that the current character of the area that is distinctive to the residents with its affiliated activities needs to be retained. This finding implies that it is very important to name the area covered by the old city centre as a conservation area as well as to act as a model for the design of future city centres in Libya in terms of its planning and townscape qualities.

Symbolic meanings. This study has shown that physical elements become an icon or have strong symbolic meanings not only because of their unique design or shape but also due to meaning connotations that they hold and represent to the society. These connotations associated with the places are related to personal as well as group experiences. The meanings are driven by the functional use of the interior functional use of the building (e.g., national museum), or driven by the important physical elements, as a sign relies on a particular past memory or political history of the city. The findings of this research suggest that meanings can be generated from understanding and be knowing the sequences of events that the places and people are associated within their collective memory. This was evident in recalling the new Mosque of Al Alee as a unique building because the design was inspired by the blue and white colour of the flag that symbolises the first state while its form was based on the Islamic star of eight points. The findings suggest that the meanings were strongly reflected in non-visual dimensions that influenced distinctiveness of the place. This can be linked to findings from Stedman (2003), which showed that physical elements connect with meanings as the importance of a setting is held by the people.

The sense of belonging and pride. In this study, it was found that the meanings were evoked by elements that are felt to be the profound reasons that a place continues to be proud. This was reflected in traditions and local products that are specifically associated with the city from its early history. Respondents felt that features belong to their city and they are proud of them, as they are linked to the past generation of the society. This suggests that the sense of belonging and rootedness determine the strength of place meanings (Manzo, 2005; Relph, 1976). In response to the current changes, respondents suggest the traditional area should readopt and reuse a conserved zone with attractive spots to revive the place. The spirit of the place, therefore, rooted in the past, makes up the essence of the place despite the continuous changes in the physical environment. This can also be linked to Relph's (1976) theory that spirit of place involves features deriving from the past and the current situation can lead to the determination of place identity.

Meaning and urban change. Cities are formed and develop throughout the time, which are shaped by both physical and cultural forces. They constantly change, develop and transform but, within this inevitable change, how meaningful places can be created. In this study, respondents were asked about their reactions towards the urban changes and their impact on the place identity. The findings of this research, as shown in chapter Seven, discovered that continuity between past and present is an important underlying dimension to create meaningful places. It is evident that participants positively indicated the physical improvement of the city centre with relying upon features from the past as a solution to protect the place identity. This suggests that built heritage has a meanings features for the citizens because of the significant story of the past with meanings and cultural values involved and can be used for innovative design and prudence new ideas. In line with Gospodini (2004) and Kaymaz (2013), the findings of the research suggested that both innovative design and built heritage contribute to maintaining the place identity equally as perceived by the citizens. These findings also confirm the theory of the place identity process (Breakwell, 1988; Twigger-Ross & Uzzell, 1996, Gustafson, 2001) and continuity theory of place meanings (Massey and Jess, 1995).

9.2.3 The Significance of Place Quality Associated with Place Attachment in Defining Place Identity

The third question was posed to explore the form of attachment as a psychological factor of the person-place relationship and experience based on the residents' perceptions of the physical characteristics of the place. The results from Chapter 8 suggest that attachment to the city centre of Misurata is strongly shaped by both the functional and emotional characteristics.

It was found that the users are emotionally attached to Misurata. Emotional attachment is developed as a result of the meanings and significance of the places to the life of the residents that they strongly identify with. Place attachment evokes feelings and emotions towards places, and therefore makes places more meaningful to the residents. This is due to the high degree of sense of belonging and social bonding. The emotional attachment forms the identity of the people and places. It

is evident that the strong emotional response towards the city was expressed by both those who are natives and those who are long term residents and involved in the city's community, having established a strong sense of belonging. This was expressed in the high degree of care and concern about the city.

The sense of pride and belonging reflect the emotional attachment through the ability of the place to evoke the respondents' insightful emotions. The place identity is established through residents' identifications with the places (i.e. traditional and historical), social ties and the sense of belonging. It can be supposed that the emotional attachment contributes to a stronger place identity of the people who originally live in the city as this reflects a strong sense of locality. This is in agreement with the place attachment notion that place attachment denotes person, collective and cultural self-definition and integrity (Altman, 1992).

Social ties (family, friends, relatives) strongly prevailed in the residents' attachment to the city at a higher level. This is evident in the way the residents identified themselves in association with others. The terms such as 'our city', 'Misurata', 'our conservative society', 'Misurata history', 'commitment towards society', 'sense of community' and 'shared events' during the interview indicated a strong sense of belonging related to the city as a whole. Another factor of social attachment occurred at a personal attachment level when participants stated that they loved this city and were attached to it because they were born there and grew up there, their family had lived there for a generation and they had no intention of ever leaving. This indicates that social network is strongly linked with place attachment. In this respect, the social cohesion is an essential element of space, which generates attachment and a sense of belonging. This finding can be linked to Davenport and Anderson's (2005) theory that places manifest the physical characteristics of a setting, activities and experiences in a setting, social phenomena and processes where meanings are translated into strong emotional bonds that influence attitudes and behaviour. The values of the place rooted from the sociocultural need to be interpreted in the physical features to create meaningful places, thus increase attachment to those places.

Findings of this research confirm that functional attachment plays an important role in shaping a distinct atmosphere of a certain place and its city centre. The functional implication of the city centre can be referred to as its public services and amenities, shopping activities, satisfaction of use as well as the human needs. It was observed that most of the residents perceived the city centre as a place of their choice in supporting their shopping activities, work, earnings and personal needs. This supports the findings from other scholars that place attachment is developed when the environment fulfils the functional desires of the inhabitants (Stedman, 2002). This implies that the functional attachment, including land use and building use, are seen as important elements of urban design. Therefore, a future decision to enhance the city centre should consider the desirable activities and use of the city centre to enhance attachment with it so that it becomes part of their identity.

Diverse activities that are produced by the multiple types of uses and the way that goods are displayed create a unique atmosphere and form a stronger functional attachment. This was evident in the traditional area where most vendors, active frontage, and social interactions occur and it was the most positively mentioned place regarding functional attachment. In line with Stokols and Shumaker (1981), this suggests that the diversity of options and the greater number of a range of needs that met within a place, the more satisfaction will be felt towards that place.

The research findings also suggest that familiarity with place strongly determines the place attachment. It is realised that, places become familiar as a result of frequent visits and through the type of places and attractions, thus highlighting how the associations between self and place are developed. The findings also suggest that familiarity with place is evoked through frequent visits during someone's past or childhood. If a place has the ability to attract people to visit and become familiar with it due to its rich context, it is more likely to produce deeper and lasting meanings. This can be linked to findings from other researchers on the influence of place habitation and consistent visits for strengthening attachment to place (Hay, 1998; Gustafson, 2001).

Residents also associated familiarity with specific places in the city centre that they found to be their favourite places to visit such as a specific shop, café, streets that they use for their activities and so on. Identification of the city centre (as a whole) with specific places that residents are familiar with such as a commercial complex, a specific street, places that are well known and popular to the residents are strongly evident. There is continued familiarity with the city centre as a place associated with attachment to specific elements of attraction. In this regard, it is discovered that the degree of familiarity with places in the city centre varies between genders according to their frequency of visits and elements of attraction. This suggests that attachment to place influences the socio-cultural factors.

The regularity and the degree of engagement with a place are strongly associated with the formulation of place attachment. As stressed by respondents, engagement with place provides enjoyable feelings deriving from the related activities that provide a strong sense of community. This kind of well-being and enjoyment were reflected in the traditional area. For instance, respondents felt that the shaded space with narrow alleyways and vendors provided a distinct atmosphere and encouraged people to gather and meet others. The meeting points at active spots (such as Al Nasser Square and Al Hoot Square) were also linked to the enjoyable walks within a comfortable space. The sense of enjoyment expressed by the respondents reflects their familiarity with the place and the place's ability to provide choices of goods and a range of prices for items. Therefore, place engagement is strongly linked to the purpose and intention of being in the streets and the ability of the streets to support the desired activities. This suggests that spaces that support human activities (e.g., traditional setting) reflect a strong sense of community and identity based on the cultural needs that give meaning and purpose to the life of the attached residents. These findings are in line with Ujang (2014, p. 66) who found that engagement with place influenced the attachment and '*thus contributes to the continuity of place identity'*.

9.3 Contributions of the Research

There are four most important contributions of the research:

Firstly, this research has validated the important aspects of the human experience in urban design. The study is unique in that it has been carried out using three dimensions of human experience (i.e. perception, meanings and attachment) as a framework for examining the place identity. Furthermore, the research has also established the connection between the physical environment and the psychological factors (meaning and attachment) as key sources of reference in defining place identity. It brings together the aspects of objective (physical form) and subjective (psychological factor) of place as conceived by the human experience. In other words, it goes beyond the distinctive features of the physical environment in defining the essence of place but also considers the interpretations of the meanings and the psychological experience embossed by these prominent features. This research extends the knowledge of our understanding of place identity through establishing a multi-dimensional holistic approach that reflects the complexity of place identity. It also provides a framework for the exploration of place identity through the integration of environmental psychology and physical environment into urban planning and urban design. A key strength of the present study was the redefining the notion of place identity through the integration of both the place attributes and environmental psychological factors (see Figure 9.1). Hence, the key strength of the present study was the integration of the psychological aspects of environmental experience and physical characteristics whereby the key residents and their perceptions and feelings about the places are regarded as the key sources of reference in defining place identity.
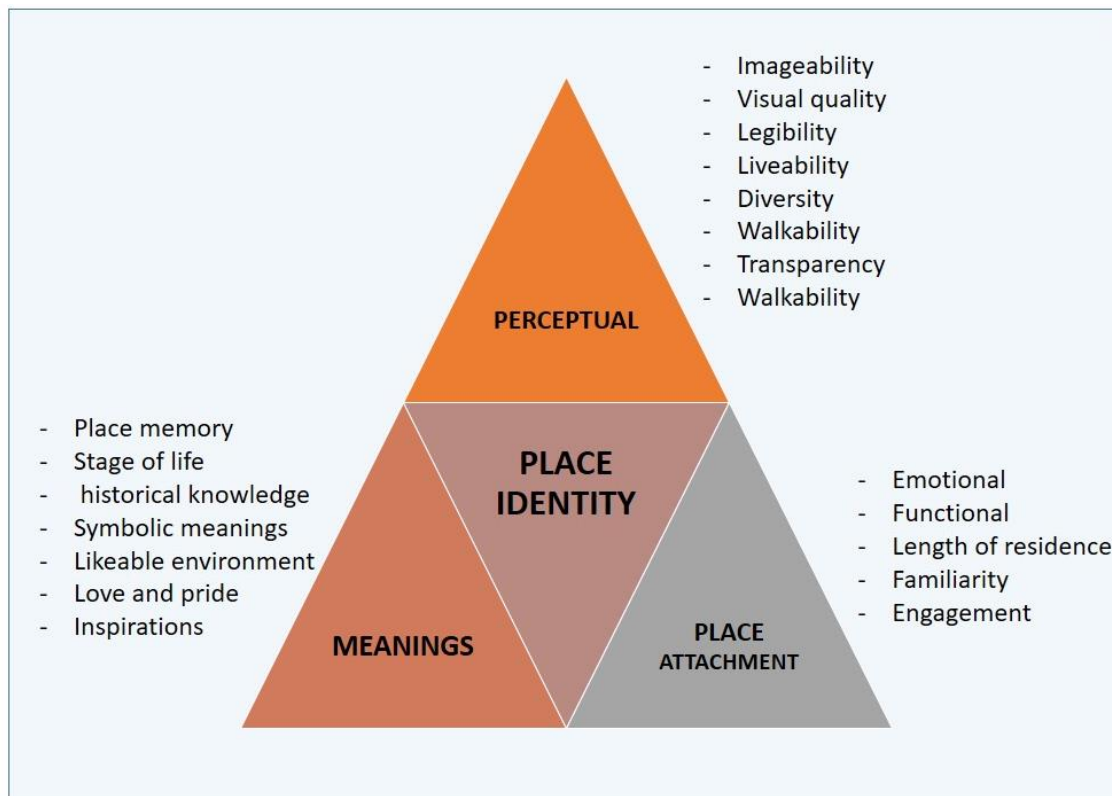
Figure 9.1: Place Identity Quality Diagram. Source: The author, (2017).

Secondly, the study contributes to a growing body of literature about the place, and place identity differentiation that recognises the different societies experiencing their urban settings. It will be an addition of knowledge about experience of place to specific populations in specific places, social and cultural contexts and interpretations of the personality of the place. This study is important for increasing the definition of what place identity means within Libyan context. It confirms the importance of improving the quality of spatial characteristics as perceived by its inhabitants. It will help to ensure that the undergoing urban changes and developments will not inhibit the daily interaction of residents nor threaten their sense of belonging.

The third contribution of this study was the selection of the case study. As mentioned in Chapter Two, despite the fact that places have a range of scales from a room to a country, the most previous studies on concepts of place and place identity have been mostly restricted to the context of the residential neighbourhood

or community (Casakin et al., 2015). Others have considered wilderness settings, outdoor recreational areas and tourism destinations (Davenport and Anderson, 2005; Stedman, 2003; Williams et al., 1992; Brown et al., 2003) in examining the connection between people and their settings e.g. place attachment. The one key strength of this study, therefore, is its contribution to the body of literature on place identity in the context of the city centre. It provides an extension of knowledge on place identity understanding and interpretation of specific residents in specific physical and sociocultural contexts.

The final contribution of this research is in terms of the planning and urban design implications. Several urban design strategies and guidelines were suggested in order to enhance the identity of Misurata and other existing Libyan towns and cities. In the context of the study, the study fills a gap in the massively overlooked evidence of demonstrating the distinct characteristics of Libyan towns and cities through adopting a unique framework as an indication of urban quality associated with place identity. Within the Libyan context, it is essential to ensure that the sense and spirit of place are not lost as a result of the places losing their distinct character or from a drastic change in their identity. This research will provide evidence as regards place identity and why urban places are important in both a physical and emotional way. This study enriches the knowledge of architecture, design and planning as well as that of decision-makers and challenges them with place identity issues in the light of urban growth and development processes, providing vital insight into how to examine the place quality using a framework such as is offered here.

9.4 Planning and Urban Design Implications

In the context of the case study, the research results suggest some important recommendations that could be useful for present and future developments to achieve greater congruence in the physical environment and characteristics in light of the urban changes and existing problems in place identity. A variety of points, suggestions and recommendations have already been presented in previous

sections and this section seeks to highlight some of the more major recommendations. The object is not to produce a definite policy, but to recommend some general principles for improving the existing design and planning framework in Misurata particularly and in the Libyan context in general. The implications of the research to planning and urban design of places in the local context can be summaries as the following:

Despite the poor condition of the physical structures of the existing traditional area, it was discovered that the distinctive characteristics of the traditional area were the presence of activities, vendors, retail, diversity in products and goods and the mixed use. Thus, it is important to designate the traditional area as a conservation zone and policies on conservation should cover all activity aspects for future development. These policies should also cover important historic buildings, building use, affiliated activities, trees and land use pattern. All historical worn-out buildings should be rehabilitated, reused and adapted where possible. The local authority is encouraged to co-operate with the owners to restore the old shops, as the cost of conserving old buildings is usually quite substantial. The urban random sprawl in the existing traditional area should be taken very seriously by the local authority considering its negative effects on the urban image and identity. The traditional quarter should be used as a core area of tourism promotion. It is also recommended that the Historical Castel Building be renovated and kept for its original use, which is administrative. This would be in accordance with its function as the earliest building in the city centre. Although we increasingly appear not to have to recall again the heritage style as the model of good city design, features that are associated with meanings, culture and support social interaction should be considered as places possessing more qualities associated with identity.

It was discovered that one unique characteristic of the city centre is the existing circulation pattern. The ring roads and spine running across the system were greatly noticed as one of the distinctive elements for Misurata. The interviews revealed that respondents found that the organisation of the major streets, street junctions and their connectivity enhances the accessibility and also paves the way for future

infrastructure improvement. As a policy, it is therefore desirable that the existing structure plan and layout pattern be retained in any future development of the Misurata city centre. Physical features such as street furniture, landscape, signage and greenness were identified to be potential elements for enhancing the place quality and promoting distinctiveness of streets, as highlighted in Chapter Six.

The findings of this research confirm that it is important to understand that the structure of cities gives a sense of direction to the residents and offers clues about accessibility, making it easy to read the city. In the case of Misurata city centre, the prevailing circulation pattern consisting of a ring road system and a spine running across the city centre was seen to be very distinctive to the residents. The car congestion and traffic jam at peak times sometimes cause a chaotic feeling, yet the simplicity of the layout of the city centre provides many opportunities to find ways and increase accessibility. As a strategy, it is therefore desirable that this circulation pattern needs to be retained and any future development of Misurata's city centre should recognise the distinctiveness of the present network. The distinctiveness of the major and minor road networks can be enhanced by distinguishing the design of traffic directions, street layout, signage, landscape and street furniture. The results show the potential of a legible environment in enhancing the image of the city.

It was shown in Chapter Six that diversity in building use, active frontages and other related activities occurring along the street were one of the most common reasons for remembering and recalling the street. It is, therefore, suggested that mixture of use and activities can be encouraged to make vibrant places. The setting for these activities could be enhanced by providing better amenities, insulation between pedestrians and cars, providing shade, pavements and street furniture.

It was noticed that sense of place was influenced by the walkability, as respondents stressed that they could develop deeper feelings towards places that they often walk through rather than those they drive in. It was also discovered that the physical features are important for walkability and influenced by car congestion. The walkability, therefore, should be increased through adopting traffic calming

schemes, improving the physical conditions of the pedestrian pathways and sidewalks, and promoting diversity of public use along the streets in the city centre. Enhancing the quality of physical elements including paving, vegetation, and other street facilities should be key concerns in future urban developments for the local authority.

It was discovered that the Al Alee Mosque was one of the most distinctive features of the city centre for the respondents. Mosques could be a feature that strengthen the identity of the existing city centres in Libya. The design of Mosques should ensure their visibility and accessibility to the populations and acts, as a central core not only ties the structure form of the city but also the sociocultural network. Perceptually, buildings, in general, play an important role as identifiable landmarks. The findings of Chapter Six revealed that the characteristics that influenced distinctiveness of buildings as landmarks are the height, size, functions, architectural style, location and meanings and associations. Besides historical significance, salience and visibility played an important role for buildings to be identified as a landmark, as reflected by the Historical Castle Building. In the case of Misurata, it is recommended that the Historical Castle Building be used as a main landmark or icon for the city. Future development should respectively take into account its importance and discourage from exceeding its height. Other landmarks that are used to identify the city should be highly valued and protected in future developments.

The findings discussed in Chapter Seven confirm that several qualities associated with meanings translated in place memory and knowledge, historical knowledge, symbolic meanings, likeable environment, sense of pride and the influence of urban change on meanings. Such values that can be developed through place meanings should be considered by architects and urban designers in order to create more meaningful places. These qualities and concepts can then be used to guide design criteria for attempting to produce designs that are associated with the residents' knowledge and shared memory and so that people will attach to the places.

The findings of this research confirm that place identity can be maintained and upgraded by creating attractive places that people frequently love to visit and engage with. Place attachment, therefore, is an important factor that should be considered and integrated into urban planning and design development. This can be implemented by identifying and assessing qualities that the residents attached to and felt were significant. It is evident that the functional use and activities supported by the physical environment encourage constant attachment. In the traditional area, even though lacking in physical qualities, the informal trading, shopping activities, products types and specialisation highly promoted the attachment. The findings suggest that such demanded activities should be sustained in future developments, in order to increase the attraction and create a sense of place.

Furthermore, the findings revealed that the familiarity and degree of engagement strongly formed the place attachment. Therefore, in urban design practice, features and places that residents felt familiar with and that encouraged them to visit and to engage with should be protected and improved (an example is the Lefah Market).

All these recommendations bring about the need for preparation of an area character appraisal and management plan for Misurata, thereby enabling future policies that protect the place identity. In short, this research suggests that the combination of the quality of the physical environment and the psychological qualities can be adopted in urban design in order to create successful places that reflect their own identity.

The study will further aim to bridge the gap of knowledge of urban design in the Libyan context by integrating the components of environmental perception, the influencing factors associated with place meanings and place attachment in defining the place identity.

9.5 Limitations of the Study

As with any research, there are several limitations in this study, which should be highlighted. In the following part, the strengths and the weaknesses of the research are briefly evaluated.

Data Collection and Analysis

On issue that occurred was related to linguistic matters (Masser et al., 1984). The data collection was conducted in the Arabic language, so the survey and interview questions were translated from English to Arabic. In addition to some linguistic issues, such as giving the conceptual links or rephrasing words and defining some terms, transcribing the interviews from Arabic to English took a very long period of time. However, the benefit of this long process of transcription is that the researcher increasingly became more familiar with the data, especially at the beginning stage of analysing the data.

The other problem faced by the researcher in the data collection is related to the sample itself (the residents). The ability of ordinary people to express their ideas and understanding about their city differs from experts and specialists (professionals). Many respondents in the face-to-face interviews found that it was difficult to answer questions of 'how' and 'why' specifically when it came to the discussion about meanings and place attachment. An attempt was made to overcome these difficulties by simplifying the questions and asking indirect questions and engaging in minute dialogues to make the topic understandable. Hence, for future research on place meaning and place attachment when residents are employed as a sample, it may be better to prepare a list of specific questions with different alternatives before the actual interview is conducted. This will save time and make the conservation more interesting and longer.

Mixed Methods

This research utilised a mixed methods approach (qualitative and quantitative), which is more demanding for a single case (Williams, 1984). Furthermore, since this research is examining the notion of place identity as it is perceived and recognised by individuals, it is essentially qualitative research. The research is based on the grounded theory strategy, in which the qualitative data was used to categorise and cluster the main research findings themes (see e.g., Gustafson, 2001). It is important to emphasise that the use of multiple qualitative methods is necessary, combining several research techniques such as interviews, observations, mapping and visual recordings or the urban experience to understand the complexities of urban places (Jacobs, 1961). The use of the quantitative method (survey) was to generate complementary data to marry up with the qualitative, in order to triangulate the data for validation issues and reduce any bias. More precisely, the objective of designing a questionnaire is not to draw a statistically representative sample, but to obtain the strategic consideration of variables expected to produce variation in the phenomenon being studied. Hence, as it has been stated in Chapter 4, the qualitative component of the research is essential for the quantitative part and helps the researcher to accomplish the stated research aims.

However, although data from both methods were analysed to be used as supportive evidence in the research findings, it was found that a qualitative method is anticipated to offer more opportunities to answer the research questions and to give the most satisfying answers. One disadvantage of using the quantitative method is the need to be very familiar with the use of software such as SPSS and knowing what variables should be analysed and what the most appropriate types of analysis are to be used. This needs a long time to be managed and also it seems the statistical data is not as significant as the text or observation data in this type of research. Therefore, it is suggested that applying the qualitative method alone in this kind of study would be more efficient and an easier approach, especially when time and resources are limited.

Case Study Selection

This research is based on a single case study, which is the city centre as one unit. Misurata city centre is a large scale area consisting of mixed land use, squares and streets and such an area with diversity in spatial settings might have affected the chance of gaining deeper information about the case study. It was difficult to cover all aspects of the study area very deeply. In this regard, it is suggested that further research may apply more case studies (at micro levels i.e. a street or a square or traditional zone) to obtain more robust results and comparisons, such as comparing a traditional quarter with a new quarter in the city centre or even in another context. However, the single case provides comprehensive information for looking at the phenomenon of study in different ways.

9.6 Suggestions for Further Research

Naturally, the thesis findings leave many questions unanswered, as this research investigated place identity using multi-dimensional concepts based on the person-place relationship, which is a fruitful area for further work. The research has thrown up many questions in need of further investigation.

a. The findings of Chapter 6 and 7 suggested that engagement with place and activity played an important role in influencing the perception of identity. Attributes such as active frontage, diversity, walkability, and social interaction have been regarded as the most identifiable place qualities associated with place identity. A further investigation would be necessary to provide detailed evidence about place identity and its effect on the perception and activity within the urban environment.

b. The findings of this research suggest that attachment to place is strongly influenced by socio-demographic characteristics, particularly by gender. Thus, observing the variation of the degree of attachment according to respondents' characteristics can provide vital information as to the significance of place and meaning of differing genders and other social groups (e.g., elderly and young).

Such researchers would need to establish the influence of socio-demographic characteristics on the way a person-place relationship is formed.

c. It is evident that the traditional area of the city centre received a stronger reaction than other parts in the city centre in terms of meanings and attachment. It would be interesting to assess the effects of the variation in place identity according to differing physical characteristics of similar contexts.   A comparative study of perception variation between traditional zones and modern settings could provide vital information regarding the significance and meaning of places of differing characteristics.

d. Finally, this research has focused on place identity based on residents' experiences and perceptions. The framework adopted could also be applied in another context, both locally and globally. It is suggested that examining place identity using the same framework adopted in this study could make it applicable to a much wider sample or other types of places such as neighbourhood, square and street. It might further be transferred to any contextually similar study. In addition, it should be noted that these three concepts and their indicators were often situated in the relationship between each other and overlapped from various perspectives, thus this should not be the end of the analysis.

9.7   General Conclusion

The main purpose of this inquiry has been to examine place identity within the Libyan context. In this regard, the three inter-related concepts of place (*environmental perception, meanings and emotional attachment*) create balanced relationships between persons and their places and ultimately the self-identity is gained. Place identity is not just a physical matter but also a quality that is associated with the physicality of a place. By referring to the main aim of this study, it can be argued that place identity can become significant in urban design through a consideration of other subjective factors such as the environmental psychology dimension of place. This study has specifically examined the significance of

emotional attachment and meanings on human perceptions and how people may perceive their places in the ways that are associated to place identity.

In this respect, it can be argued that people attach to certain meanings of the physical environment; thus, there remains a great potential to enhance the place identity with implications from the qualities associated with the essence of place. To conclude, place identity can refer to a set of multiple associations evoked by individuals to define their self-identity with a place. The complexity of the relationship between a person and a place is a perceptual matter that is often associated with the awareness of the essence of place in which place identity can be defined. This thesis confirms that it contributes the psychological factor to sustaining place identity, meaning that our cities and places should not only be 'readable' environments (i.e., imageable and legible places), but should also invoke feelings and knowledge as continuants of human production towards their places.

Finally, it is hoped that this research will become a source of useful information and provide a platform for future research into place identity within the Libyan context. It is also hoped that this study provides a contribution toward the study of place identity in general.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Abdul-Karim, A. (2011). *Of what guilt it was demolished,* Benghazi, Libya, Unified Book.

Abel, C. (2000). *Architecture and identity: Responses to cultural and technological change*, Routledge.

Abubrig, A. I. (2012). *Towards a holistic islamic urbanism: Planning for tripoli in the new libya.* PhD, the University of Leicester.

Abudib, H. H. (2016). *Exploring contextual characteristics of traditional medinas in north africa*. International Journal of Architectural Research: ArchNet-IJAR, 10**,** 325-343.

Alexander, C. (1979). *The timeless way of building*, New York: Oxford University Press.

Alexander, C., Ishikawa, S., Silverstein, M., I Ramió, J. R., Jacobson, M. & Fiksdahl-King, I. (1977). *A pattern language*, Gustavo Gili.

Altman, I. & Chemers, M. M. (1984). *Culture and environment*, CUP Archive.

Ameli, S. H., Hamidi, S., Garfinkel-Castro, A. & Ewing, R. (2015). *Do better urban design qualities lead to more walking in salt lake city, utah?* Journal of Urban Design, 20**,** 393-410.

Amin, A. (2006). *The good city*. Urban studies, 43**,** 1009-1023.

Aniba, O. M. (2010). *Geographical of misurata,* Misurata, Libya, Dar libraray.

Appleyard, D. (1973). *Notes on urban perception and knowledge*. Image and environment. Cognitive mapping and spatial behavior**,** 109-114.

Arefi, M. (1999). *Non‑place and placelessness as narratives of loss: Rethinking the notion of place*. Journal of urban design, 4**,** 179-193.

Arefi, M. (2011). *Urban transformation: Understanding city design and form*.

Banai, R. (1999). *A methodology for the image of the city*. Environment and Planning B, 26**,** 133-144.

Banz, G. (1970). *Elements of urban form*, McGraw-Hill.

Basabe, N. (2013). *Social processes and collective memory: A cross-cultural approach to remembering political events*. Collective memory of political events: Social psychological perspectives**,** 147.

Bazeley, P. & Jackson, K. (2013). *Qualitative data analysis with nvivo*, Sage Publications Limited.

Bentley, I. (1985). *Responsive environments*, Routledge.

Bentley, I. (2004). *Urban transformations: Power, people and urban design*, Routledge.

Bernard, H. R. (2011). *Research methods in anthropology: Qualitative and quantitative approaches*, Rowman Altamira.

Bernard, H. R. & Bernard, H. R. (2012). *Social research methods: Qualitative and quantitative approaches*, Sage.

Bernardo, F., Almeida, J. & Martins, C. (2016). *Urban identity and tourism: Different looks, one single place*.

Blaikie, N. (2000). *Designing social research,* UK and USA, Polity Press.

Blake, G. H. (1968). *Misurata: A market town in tripolitania*, University of Durham (Department of Geography).

Bonaiuto, M., Breakwell, G. M. & Cano, I. (1996). *Identity processes and environmental threat: The effects of nationalism and local identity upon perception of beach pollution*. Journal of Community & Applied Social Psychology, 6**,** 157-175.

Bott, S., Cantrill, J. G. & Myers Jr, O. E. (2003). *Place and the promise of conservation psychology*. Human Ecology Review, 10**,** 100-112.

Breakwell, G. M. (1986). *Coping with threatened identities. Vol. 904*, Methuen.

Brown, B., Perkins, D. D. & Brown, G. (2003). *Place attachment in a revitalizing neighborhood: Individual and block levels of analysis*. Journal of environmental psychology, 23**,** 259-271.

Brown, B. B. & Perkins, D. D. (1992). Disruptions in place attachment. *Place attachment.* Springer.

Bryman, A. (2012). *Social research methods*, Oxford university press.

Bryman, A. (2015). *Social research methods*, Oxford university press.

Buchanan, P. (1988). *What city? A plea for place in the public realm*. The architectural review, 184**,** 31-41.

Burley, D. (Year) Published. *Are the social and physical really so different?: Elements in the development of an attachment to place*. Annual Meeting of the American Sociological Association, 2007.

Butina-Watson, G. & Bentley, I. (2007). *Identity by design*, Routledge.

Buttimer, A. (1976). *Grasping the dynamism of lifeworld*. Annals of the association of American geographers, 66**,** 277-292.

Canter, D. (1977). *The psychology of place,* London, The Architecture Press LTD.

Carmona, M., Punter, J. V. & Chapman, D. (2002). *From design policy to design quality: The treatment of design in community strategies, local development frameworks and action plans*, Thomas Telford.

Carmona, M. & Tiesdell, S. (2007). *Urban design reader*, Routledge.

Carmona, M., Tiesdell, S., Heath, T. & Oc, T. (2010). *Public places-urban spaces*, Routledge.

Casakin, H., Hernández, B. & Ruiz, C. (2015). *Place attachment and place identity in israeli cities: The influence of city size*. Cities, 42**,** 224-230.

Chapman, D. W. & Larkham, P. J. (1999). *Urban design, urban quality and the quality of life: Reviewing the department of the environment's urban design campaign*. Journal of Urban Design, 4**,** 211-232.

Cheshmehzangi, A. (2012a). *Identity and public realm*. Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences, 50**,** 307-317.

Cheshmehzangi, A. (2012b). *Reviving urban identities through temporary use of public relams.* PhD, University of Nottingham.

Chow, K. & Healey, M. (2008). *Place attachment and place identity: First-year undergraduates making the transition from home to university*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 28**,** 362-372.

Cohen, A. P. (1994). *Culture, identity and the concept of boundary*. Revista de antropologia social**,** 49-62.

Conway, M. A. (1997). *The inventory of experience: Memory and identity*. Collective memory of political events: Social psychological perspectives**,** 21-45.

Cresswell, T. (2004). *Place*, Blackwell Pub.

Creswell, J. W. (2007). *Qualitative inquiry and research design* USA, Sage Publication, Inc.

Creswell, J. W. (2012). *Educational research planning, conducting, and evaluating quantitative and qualitative research,* Boston Columbus Indianapolis New York San Francisco Upper Saddle River Amsterdam Cape Town Dubai London Madrid Milan Munich Paris Montreal Toronto Delhi Mexico City São Paulo Sydney Hong Kong Seoul Singapore Taipei Tokyo, Pearson.

Creswell, J. W. (2013). *Research design: Qualitative, quantitative, and mixed methods approaches,* United Kingdom, Sage publications, Inc.

Creswell, J. W. & Clark, V. L. P. (2011). *Designing and conducting mixed methods research,* London, SAGE Publication, Inc.

Creswell, J. W., Plano Clark, V. L., Gutmann, M. L. & Hanson, W. E. (2003). *Advanced mixed methods research designs*. Handbook of mixed methods in social and behavioral research**,** 209-240.

Cuba, L. & Hummon, D. M. (1993a). *A place to call home: Identification with dwelling, community, and region*. The sociological quarterly, 34**,** 111-131.

Cuba, L. & Hummon, D. M. (1993b). *A place to call home: Identification with dwelling, community, and region*. Sociological Quarterly**,** 111-131.

Cullen, G. (1961). *The concise townscape*, Routledge.

Cuthbert, A. R. (2003). *Designing cities critical readings in urban design,* USA, UK & Australia, Blackwell Publishing.

Davenport, M. A. & Anderson, D. H. (2005). *Getting from sense of place to place-based management: An interpretive investigation of place meanings and perceptions of landscape change*. Society and natural resources, 18**,** 625-641.

Daza, M. H. (1982). *Understanding the traditional built environment: Crisis, change, and the issue of human needs in the context of habitations and settlements in libya*.

De Vaus, D. (2002). *Surveys in social research*, Psychology Press.

Dember, W. N. (1960). *The psychology of perception*.

Devine-Wright, P. & Lyons, E. (1997). *Remembering pasts and representing places: The construction of national identities in ireland*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 17**,** 33-45.

Devine-Wright, P. (2009). *Rethinking nimbyism: The role of place attachment and place identity in explaining place‑protective action*. Journal of Community & Applied Social Psychology, 19**,** 426-441.

Dixon, J. (2000). *Displacing place-identity: A discursive approach to locating self and other*. British Journal of Social Phychology, 39.

Dolbani, M. (2000). *Responsive public open spaces in the city centre of kuala lumpur*. Unpublished PHD thesis. JCUD, Oxford Brookes University.

Dovey, K. (2014). *Framing places: Mediating power in built form*, Routledge.

Downs, R. M. & Stea, D. (1973). *Cognitive maps and spatial behavior: Process and products*, na.

Droseltis, O. & Vignoles, V. L. (2010). *Towards an integrative model of place identification: Dimensionality and predictors of intrapersonal-level place preferences*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 30**,** 23-34.

Dumbaugh, E. & Gattis, J. (2005). *Safe streets, livable streets*. Journal of the American Planning Association, 71**,** 283-300.

El-Dien Ouf, A. M. S. (2008). *Lower and higher urban quality cycles in urban heritage areas: Rejuvenation vs. Conservation*. Journal of Urban Design, 13**,** 403-414.

Elbendak, O. E. (2008). *Urban transformation and social change in a libyan city: An anthropological study of tripoli.* PhD, National University of Ireland.

Ermida, K. (2007a). Draft subdomain planned: Third-generation schemes the region of misrata. Triploi The interest of urban planning

Ermida, K. A. (2007b). *The occured beauty of misurat,* Libya, Book, publishing, and printing.

Essayed, N. (1981). *A household survey in tripoli, libya*. Ekistics**,** 152-156.

Ewing, R. & Handy, S. (2009). *Measuring the unmeasurable: Urban design qualities related to walkability*. Journal of Urban design, 14**,** 65-84.

Ewing, R., Handy, S., Brownson, R. C., Clemente, O. & Winston, E. (2006). *Identifying and measuring urban design qualities related to walkability*. Journal of Physical Activity and Health, 3**,** S223-S240.

Fenton, D. & Reser, J. (Year) Published. *The assessment of landscape quality-an integrative approach*. AUSTRALIAN PSYCHOLOGIST, 1986. AUSTRALIAN PSYCHOLOGICAL SOC 1 GRATTAN STREET, CARLTON VICTORIA 3053, AUSTRALIA, 321-321.

Finlay, L. (2012). Debating phenomenological methods. *Hermeneutic phenomenology in education.* Springer.

Fishwick, L. & Vining, J. (1992). *Toward a phenomenology of recreation place*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 12**,** 57-63.

Florida, R. (2002). *The rise of the creative class, and how it is transforming work, leisure, community and everyday life*. New York.

Francescato, D. & Mebane, W. (1973). How citizens view two great cities: Milan and rome. Inr. M. Downs & d. Stea (eds.), images and environment: Cognitive mappingandspatial behavior. Chicago: Aldine.

Garner, W. R., Hake, H. W. & Eriksen, C. W. (1956). *Operationism and the concept of perception*. Psychological review, 63**,** 149.

Garnham (1985). *Maintaining the sense of identity - a process for the preservation of town character,* Mesa Arizona, ADA publishers corporation.

Gehl, J. (2011). *Life between buildings: Using public space*, Island Press.

Gehl, J., Kaefer, L. J. & Reigstad, S. (2006). *Close encounters with buildings*. Urban Design International, 11**,** 29-47.

Gibberd, F. (1970). *Town design*, architectural Press.

Giddens, A. (1991). *Modernity and self-identity: Self and society in the late modern age*, Stanford University Press.

Gieryn, T. F. (2000). *A space for place in sociology*. Annual review of sociology**,** 463-496.

Ginting, N. & Wahid, J. (2015). *Exploring identity's aspect of continuity of urban heritage tourism*. Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences, 202**,** 234-241.

Giuliani, M. V. (1991). *Towards an analysis of mental representations of attachment to the home*. Journal of Architectural and Planning Research**,** 133-146.

Giuliani, M. V. (2003). *Theory of attachment and place attachment*. Psychological Theories For Environmental Issues.

Giuliani, M. V. & Feldman, R. (1993). *Place attachment in a developmental and cultural context*. Journal of environmental psychology, 13**,** 267-267.

Gjerde, M. (2011). *Visual evaluation of urban streetscapes: How do public preferences reconcile with those held by experts?* Urban Design International, 16**,** 153-161.

Glaser, B. G. & Strauss, A. L. (2009). *The discovery of grounded theory: Strategies for qualitative research*, Transaction Publishers.

Golan, A. (2015). *The street as urban icon? Tel aviv's rothschild boulevard*. Urban Geography**,** 1-14.

Gosling, D. & Maitland, B. (1984). *Concepts of urban design*, Academy Editions.

Gospodini, A. (2004). *Urban morphology and place identity in european cities: Built heritage and innovative design*. Journal of Urban Design, 9**,** 225-248.

Green, R. (2010). *Scenic and town character assessment*. Australian Planner, 37:1.

Greene, S. (1992). *Cityshape communicating and evaluating community design*. Journal of the American Planning Association, 58**,** 2.

Groat, L. (1995). *Introduction: Place, aesthetic evaluation and home*. Giving places meaning**,** 1-26.

Groat, L. N. & Wang, D. (2013). *Architectural research methods*, John Wiley & Sons.

Gu, H. & Ryan, C. (2008). *Place attachment, identity and community impacts of tourism—the case of a beijing hutong*. Tourism management, 29**,** 637-647.

Gustafson, P. (2001). *Meanings of place: Everyday experience and theoretical conceptualizations*. Journal of environmental psychology, 21**,** 5-16.

Gustafson, P. (2002). *Place, place attachment and mobility. Three sociological studies*.

Haartsen, T., Groote, P. & Huigen, P. P. (2000). *Claiming rural identities: Dynamics, contexts, policies*, Uitgeverij Van Gorcum.

Harlan, S., Larsen, L., Hackett, E., Wolf, S., Bolin, B., Hope, D., Kirby, A., Nelson, A. & Rex, T. (2005). *Neighborhood attachment in urban environments*. Annual Sociological Association.

Harrison, J. D. & Howard, W. A. (1972). *The role of meaning in the urban image*. Environment and Behavior, 4**,** 389.

Hasanudin, L. (2003). *A comparative analysis of perception of urban landmarks between designers, non-designers and laypublic: Kuala lumpur malaysia*. Unpublished PHD Thesis, University of Sheffield.

Hauge, Å. L. (2007). *Identity and place: A critical comparison of three identity theories*. Architectural science review, 50**,** 44-51.

Hay, R. (1998). *Sense of place in developmental context*. Journal of environmental psychology, 18**,** 5-29.

Hernandez, B., Hidalgo, M. C., Salazar-Laplace, M. E. & Hess, S. (2007). *Place attachment and place identity in natives and non-natives*. Environmental Psychology, 27.

Hernández, B., Hidalgo, M. C., Salazar-Laplace, M. E. & Hess, S. (2007). *Place attachment and place identity in natives and non-natives*. Journal of environmental psychology, 27**,** 310-319.

Hidalgo, M. C. (2013). *Operationalization of place attachment: A consensus proposal*. Estudios de Psicología, 34**,** 251-259.

Hidalgo, M. C. & Hernandez, B. (2001). *Place attachment: Conceptual and empirical questions*. Journal of environmental psychology, 21**,** 273-281.

Hidalgo, M. C. & Hernández, B. (2001). *Place attachment: Conceptual and empirical questions*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 21**,** 273-281.

Hillier, B. & Hanson, J. (1984). *The social logic of space*, Cambridge university press Cambridge.

Hull, R. B., Lam, M. & Vigo, G. (1994). *Place identity: Symbols of self in the urban fabric*. Landscape and urban planning, 28**,** 109-120.

Hunziker, M., Buchecker, M. & Hartig, T. (2007). Space and place–two aspects of the human-landscape relationship. *A changing world.* Springer.

Hussain, K. a. M. & Ujang, N. (2014). *Visitors' identification of landmarks in the historic district of banda hilir, melaka, malaysia*. Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences, 153**,** 689-699.

Jacobs, A. & Appleyard, D. (1987). *Toward an urban design manifesto*. Journal of the American Planning Association, 53**,** 112-120.

Jacobs, A. B. (1993). *Great streets*. ACCESS Magazine, 1.

Jacobs, J. (1961). *The death and life of great american cities,* New York, Vintage Books.

Jive´ N, G. & Larkham, P. J. (2003). *Sense of place, authenticity and character: A commentary*.

Jive'n, G. & Larkham, P. J. (2010). *Sense of place, authenticity and character: A commentry* Journal of Urban Design, 8**,** 17.

Johnson, R. B. & Onwuegbuzie, A. J. (2004). *Mixed methods research: A research paradigm whose time has come*. Educational researcher, 33**,** 14-26.

Jones, R. & Semple, S. (2012). *Sense of place in anglo-saxon england,* UK, SHAUN TYAS.

Jorgensen, B. S. & Stedman, R. C. (2001). *Sense of place as an attitude: Lakeshore owners attitudes toward their properties*. Journal of environmental psychology, 21**,** 233-248.

Jorgensen, B. S. & Stedman, R. C. (2006). *A comparative analysis of predictors of sense of place dimensions: Attachment to, dependence on, and identification with lakeshore properties*. Journal of Environmental Management, 79**,** 316-327.

Kane, E. & O'reilly-De Brún, M. (2001). *Doing your own research*, Marion Boyars.

Kaplan, S. (1973). *Cognitive maps in perception and thought*. Image and environment**,** 63-78.

Kaymaz, I. (2013). *Urban landscapes and identity*. Additional information is available at the end of the chapter.

Kitchin, R. & Tate, N. (2013). *Conducting research in human geography: Theory, methodology and practice*, Routledge.

Knez, I. (2005). *Attachment and identity as related to a place and its perceived climate*. Journal of environmental psychology, 25**,** 207-218.

Knox, P. & Marston, S. (2004). Human geography. Upper Saddle River NJ: Pearson Education, Inc.

Korpela, K. M. (1989). *Place-identity as a product of environmental self-regulation*. Journal of Environmental psychology, 9**,** 241-256.

Krauss, S. E. (2005). *Research paradigms and meaning making: A primer*. The qualitative report, 10**,** 758-770.

Krupat, E. (1985). *People in cities: The urban environment and its effects*, Cambridge University Press.

Kyle, G., Graefe, A., Manning, R. & Bacon, J. (2004). *Effects of place attachment on users' perceptions of social and environmental conditions in a natural setting*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 24**,** 213-225.

Kyle, G. T., Jun, J. & Absher, J. D. (2013). *Repositioning identity in conceptualizations of human–place bonding*. Environment and Behavior**,** 0013916513488783.

Lai, L. Y., Said, I. & Kubota, A. (2013). *The roles of cultural spaces in malaysia's historic towns: The case of kuala dungun and taiping*. Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences, 85**,** 602-625.

Lalli, M. (1992). *Urban-related identity: Theory, measurement, and empirical findings*. Journal of environmental psychology, 12**,** 285-303.

Larice, M. & Macdonald, E. (2013). *The urban design reader*, Routledge.

Lawson, B. (2007). *Language of space*, Routledge.

Lay, M. & Reis, A. (1994). *The impact of housing quality on the urban image*. The Urban Experience. London: Chapman and Hall**,** 85-98.

Legg, S. & Mcfarlane, C. (2008). Ordinary urban spaces: Between postcolonialism and development. SAGE Publications Sage UK: London, England.

Lewicka, M. (2008a). *Place attachment, place identity, and place memory: Restoring the forgotten city past*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 28**,** 209-231.

Lewicka, M. (2008b). *Place attachment, place idnetity, and place meomory: Restoring the forgotten city past*. Environment and Behavior.

Lewicka, M. (2010). *What makes neighborhood different from home and city? Effects of place scale on place attachment*. Journal of environmental psychology, 30**,** 35-51.

Lewicka, M. (2011). *Place attachment: How far have we come in the last 40 years?* Journal of Environmental Psychology, 31.

Lieberg, M. (1994). *Appropriating the city: Teenagers' use of public space*. The urban experience. A people-environment perspective**,** 321-333.

Lim, W. S. W. (2005). *Asian ethical urbanism: A radical postmodern perspective*, World scientific.

Liu, J. H. & Hilton, D. J. (2005). *How the past weighs on the present: Social representations of history and their role in identity politics*. British Journal of Social Psychology, 44**,** 537-556.

Low, S. M. (1992). Symbolic ties that bind. *Place attachment.* Springer.

Low, S. M. & Altman, I. (1992). *Place attachment*, Springer.

Lynch, K. (1960). *The image of the city*, MIT press.

Lynch, K. (1984). *Good city form*, MIT press.

Madanipour, A. (1997). *Ambiguities of urban design*. Town Planning Review, 68**,** 363.

Madanipour, A. (2006). *Roles and challenges of urban design*. Journal of Urban Design, 11**,** 173-193.

Mahmoudi, M., Ahmad, F. & Abbasi, B. (2015). *Livable streets: The effects of physical problems on the quality and livability of kuala lumpur streets*. Cities, 43**,** 104-114.

Mannarini, T., Tartaglia, S., Fedi, A. & Greganti, K. (2006). *Image of neighborhood, self-image and sense of community*. Journal of environmental psychology, 26**,** 202-214.

Manzo, L. C. (2003). *Beyond house and haven: Toward a revisioning of emotional relationships with places*. Journal of environmental psychology, 23**,** 47-61.

Manzo, L. C. & Devine-Wright, P. (2014). *Place attachment: Advances in theory, methods and applications*, Routledge.

Marshall, C. & Rossman, G. B. (2010). *Designing qualitative research*, Sage publications.

Mashary, A. N. (2013). *Urban transformation in the city of riyadh: A study of plural urban identity*. OPEN HOUSE INTERNATIONAL, 38**,** 70-79.

Masser, I., Bourne, L., Davies, H., Faludi, A., Kunzmann, K. R., Nagamine, H. & Masser, I. (1984). *Cross national comparative planning studies: A review*. Town Planning Review, 55**,** 137.

Massey, D. (1991). *A global sense of place*, na.

Massey, D. & Jess, P. (1995). *Places and cultures in an uneven world*. A Place in the World**,** 215-239.

Mattingly, D. J. (2003). *Tripolitania*, Routledge.

Mausner, C. (1996). *A kaleidoscope model: Defining natural environments*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 16**,** 335-348.

Maxwell, J. A. (2008). *Designing a qualitative study*. The Sage handbook of applied social research methods**,** 214-253.

Mendoza, C. & Morén-Alegret, R. (2013). *Exploring methods and techniques for the analysis of senses of place and migration*. Progress in Human Geography**,** 0309132512473867.

Merriam, S. B. (2002). *Introduction to qualitative research*. Qualitative research in practice: Examples for discussion and analysis, 1**,** 1-17.

Mesch, G. S. & Manor, O. (1998). *Social ties, environmental perception, and local attachment*. Environment and behavior, 30**,** 504-519.

Meyrowitz, J. (1986). *No sense of place: The impact of electronic media on social behavior*, Oxford University Press.

Miles, M. B. & Huberman, A. M. (2014). *Qualitative data analysis*, Sage Newbury Park,, CA.

Milgram, S. (1976). *Psychological maps of paris*. Environmental psychology: People and their physical settings**,** 104-124.

Montaser, F. A. (2007). *The natural factors that influence the rise of urban centre in misurata city.* Master, University of Misurata

Montaser, M. H. A. (2013). *History of misurata: Since the islamic conquest until the end of the ottoman period (643-1912),* Libya, Misurata, Author.

Montgomery, J. (1998). *Making a city: Urbanity, vitality and urban design*. Journal of Urban Design, 3**,** 93-116.

Montgomery, J. (2003). *Cultural quarters as mechanisms for urban regeneration. Part 1: Conceptualising cultural quarters*. Planning, Practice & Research, 18**,** 293-306.

Moore, G. T. (1976). *Theory and research on the development of environmental knowing*. Environmental knowing**,** 138-164.

Moore, R. L. & Graefe, A. R. (1994). *Attachments to recreation settings: The case of rail-trail users*. Leisure Sciences, 16**,** 17-31.

Moran, D. (2001). Introduction to phenomenology, robert sokolowski. Taylor & Francis.

Morgan, P. (2010). *Towards a developmental theory of place attachment*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 30**,** 11-22.

Morse, J. M. (1991). *Approaches to qualitative-quantitative methodological triangulation*. Nursing research, 40**,** 120-123.

Moughtin, C. (2003). *Urban design: Street and square*, Routledge.

Moulay, A., Ujang, N. & Said, I. (2017). *Legibility of neighborhood parks as a predicator for enhanced social interaction towards social sustainability*. Cities, 61**,** 58-64.

Mowla, Q. A. (2004). *Memory association in place making: Understanding an urban space*. Memory, 9**,** 52-54.

Nasar, J. L. (2008). *Assessing perceptions of environments for active living*. American journal of preventive medicine, 34**,** 357-363.

Nco, N. C. O. (2007). The draft plan subregion- misurata: Third-generation schemes. Tripoli

Norberg-Schulz, C. (1976). *The phenomenon of place*. The Urban Design Reader**,** 125-137.

Othman, S., Nishimura, Y. & Kubota, A. (2013). *Memory association in place making: A review*. Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences, 85**,** 554-563.

Ouf, A. M. S. (2001). *Authenticity and the sense of place in urban design*. Journal of Urban Design, 6**,** 73-86.

Patterson, M. E. & Williams, D. R. (2005). *Maintaining research traditions on place: Diversity of thought and scientific progress*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 25**,** 361-380.

Patton, M. Q. (1990). *Qualitative evaluation and research methods*, SAGE Publications, inc.

Perkins, H. C. & Thorns, D. C. (2012). *Place, identity and everyday life in a globalizing world*, Palgrave Macmillan.

Peterson, G. (1988). *Local symbols and place identity: Tucson and albuquerque*. The social science journal, 25**,** 451-461.

Pocock, D. C. D., Hudson, R., Hudson, R., Geographer, E., Hudson, R. & Géographe, E. (1978). *Images of the urban environment*, Macmillan London.

Polservice, F. (1980). Tripoli region development plans, report no, tf2, warsaw. Final report 1980-2000. Tripoli. Libya.

Ponterotto, J. G. (2005). *Qualitative research in counseling psychology: A primer on research paradigms and philosophy of science*. Journal of counseling psychology, 52**,** 126.

Pope, C., Ziebland, S. & Mays, N. (2000). *Qualitative research in health care: Analysing qualitative data*. BMJ: British Medical Journal, 320**,** 114.

Pretty, G. H., Chipuer, H. M. & Bramston, P. (2003). *Sense of place amongst adolescents and adults in two rural australian towns: The discriminating features of place attachment, sense of community and place dependence in relation to place identity*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 23**,** 273-287.

Proshansky, H. M. (1978). *The city and self-identity*. Environment and behavior, 10**,** 147-169.

Proshansky, H. M., Fabian, A. K. & Kaminoff, R. (1983). *Place-identity: Physical world socialization of the self*. Journal of environmental psychology, 3**,** 57-83.

Punch, K. F. (2005). *Introduction to social research: Quantitative and qualitative approaches*, Sage.

Puren, K., Drewes, E. & Roos, V. (2008). *A sense of place and spatial planning in the vredefort dome, south africa*. South African geographical journal, 90**,** 134-146.

Rapoport, A. (1977). *Human aspects of urban form: Towards a man-environment approach to urban form and design*, Pergamon Press Oxford.

Rapoport, A. (1982a). *The meaning of the built environment: A nonverbal communication approach*, University of Arizona Press.

Rapoport, A. (1982b). *The meaning of the built environment: A nonverbal communication approach; with a new epiloque*, University of Arizona Press.

Rapoport, A. & Hawkes, R. (1970). *The perception of urban complexity*. Journal of the American Institute of Planners, 36**,** 106-111.

Rasmussen, S. E. (1964). *Experiencing architecture*, MIT press.

Relph, E. (1976). *Place and placelessness*, Pion London.

Relph, E. (1985). Geographical experiences and being-in-the-world: The phenomenological origins of geography. *Dwelling, place and environment.* Springer.

Robert Matthew & Parthners, J.-M. (1982). Misurata central area planning study, part three. *In:* Report, F. (ed.). Tripoli S.P.L.A.J., London & Edinburgh U.K.

Robson, C. & Mccartan, K. (2016). *Real world research*, John Wiley & Sons.

Roster, C. A., Ferrari, J. R. & Jurkat, M. P. (2016). *The dark side of home: Assessing possession 'clutter'on subjective well-being*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 46**,** 32-41.

Rubinstein, R. I. & Parmelee, P. A. (1992). Attachment to place and the representation of the life course by the elderly. *Place attachment.* Springer.

Rudner, J. (2013). *Place, identity and everyday life in a globalizing world*. URBAN POLICY AND RESEARCH, 31**,** 127-129.

Ryden, K. C. (1993). *Mapping the invisible landscape: Folklore, writing, and the sense of place*, University of Iowa Press.

Sauter, D. & Huettenmoser, M. (2008). *Liveable streets and social inclusion*. Urban Design International, 13**,** 67-79.

Scannell, L. & Gifford, R. (2010). *Defining place attachment: A tripartite organizing framework*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 8W.

Seamon, D. (1980). *Review of christian norberg-schulz's genius loci--towards a phenomenology of architecture (ny rizzoli, 1980)*.

Seamon, D. (1982). *The phenomenological contribution to environmental psychology*. Journal of environmental psychology, 2**,** 119-140.

Seamon, D. (2000). A way of seeing people and place. *Theoretical perspectives in environment-behavior research.* Springer.

Seamon, D. (2011). *Place, place identity, and phenomenology: A triadic interpretation based on jg bennett's systematics*. The role of place identity in the perception, understanding, and design of the built environment**,** 3-21.

Seamon, D. & Gill, H. (2014). *Qualitative approaches to environment-behavior research: Understanding environmental and place experiences, meanings, and actions*. Manuscript submitted for publication in R. Gifford (Ed.) Research methods in environment-behavior research. New York: Wiley/Blackwell.

Seamon, D. & Sowers, J. (2008). *Place, place identity, and phenomeology: A triadic interpretation based on j.G. Bennett's systematics*. The Role of Place Identity in The Perception, Understanding, and Design of Built Environment.

Seidman, I. (2012). *Interviewing as qualitative research: A guide for researchers in education and the social sciences*, Teachers college press.

Semken, S. & Freeman, C. B. (2008). *Sense of place in the practice and assessment of place‑based science teaching*. Science education, 92**,** 1042-1057.

Sepe, M. (2013). *Planning and place in the city mapping place identity,* USA and Canada, Routledge.

Shamai, S. (1991). *Sense of place: An empirical measurement*. Geoforum, 22**,** 347-358.

Shamsuddin, S. (1997). *Identity of place a case study of kuantan town centre, malaysia.* Doctor of Philosophy, the University of Nottingham.

Shamsuddin, S. & Ujang, N. (2008). *Making places: The role of attachment in creating the sense of place for traditional streets in malaysia*. Habitat International, 32**,** 399-409.

Shawesh, E. M. (2000). *The changing identity of the built environment in tripoli city libya.* PhD, University Of Newcastle.

Shields, R. (2013). *Places on the margin: Alternative geographies of modernity*, Routledge.

Sime, J. D. (1986). *Creating places or designing spaces?* Journal of Environmental Psychology, 6**,** 49-63.

Singh, N. K. & Khan, A. M. (2001). *Encyclopaedia of the world muslims: Tribes, castes and communities*, Global Vision Pub House.

Smaldone, D., Harris, C. & Sanyal, N. (2005). *An exploration of place as a process: The case of jackson hole, wy*. Journal of environmental psychology, 25**,** 397-414.

Smith, P. F. (2013). *Syntax of cities*, Routledge.

Speller, G. M. (2000a). *A community in transition: A longitudinal study of place attachment and identity processes in the context of an enforced relocation.* University of Surrey.

Speller, G. M. (2000b). *A community in transition: A longitudinal study of place attachment and identity processes in the context of an enforced relocation.* Doctor of Philosophy, University of Surrey.

Speller, G. M., Lyons, E. & Twigger-Ross, C. (2002). *A community in transition: The relationship between spatial change and identity processes*. Social psychological review, 4**,** 39-58.

Stamps Iii, A. E. & Smith, S. (2002). *Environmental enclosure in urban settings*. Environment and Behavior, 34**,** 781-794.

Stedman, R. C. (2002a). *Toward a social psychology of place predicting behavior from place-based cognitions, attitude, and identity*. Environment and Behavior, 34.

Stedman, R. C. (2002b). *Toward a social psychology of place: Predicting behavior from place-based cognitions, attitude, and identity*. Environment and behavior, 34**,** 561-581.

Stedman, R. C. (2003). *Is it really just a social construction?: The contribution of the physical environment to sense of place*. Society and Natural Resources: An International Journal.

Steele, F. (1981). *The sense of place*, Cbi Pub Co.

Stokols, D. & Shumaker, S. A. (1981). *People in places: A transactional view of settings*. Cognition, social behavior, and the environment**,** 441-488.

Tan, L. K. & Ujang, N. (2012). *The application of mental mapping technique in identifying the legible elements within historical district of kuala lumpur city centre*. ALAM CIPTA, International Journal of Sustainable Tropical Design Research and Practice, 5.

Tibbalds, F. (1992). *Making peopel-friendly towns: Improving the public environment in towns and cities,* London and New York, Taylor and Francis Group.

Tibbalds, F., Colbourne, K. & Williams, M. (1993). *London's urban environmental quality*. London, London Planning Advisory Committee.

Trip, J. J. (2007). *Assessing quality of place: A comparative analysis of amsterdam and rotterdam*. Journal of Urban Affairs, 29**,** 501-517.

Trochim, W. M. & Donnelly, J. P. (2001). *Research methods knowledge base*.

Tuan, Y.-F. (1977). *Space and place: The perspective of experience*, U of Minnesota Press.

Tuan, Y.-F. (1990). *Topophilia: A study of environmental perceptions, attitudes, and values*, Columbia University Press.

Twigger-Ross, C. L., Bonaiuto, M. & Breakwell, G. (2003). *Identity theories and environmental psychology*. Psychological theories for environmental issues**,** 203-233.

Twigger-Ross, C. L. & Uzzell, D. L. (1996). *Place and identity processes*. Journal of environmental psychology, 16**,** 205-220.

Twigger, C. L. (1994). *Psychological attachment to place and identity: London docklands-a case study.* University of Surrey.

Ujang, N. (2008). *Place attachment, familiarity and sustainability of urban place identity*. Department of Landscape Architecture, Faculty of Design and Architecture, University Putra, Malaysia.

Ujang, N. (2012). *Place attachment and continuity of urban place identity*. Procedia - Social and Behavioral Sciences, 49**,** 156-167.

Ujang, N. (2014). *Place meaning and significance of the traditional shopping district in the city centre of kuala lumpur, malaysia*. International Journal of Architectural Research: ArchNet-IJAR, 8**,** 66-77.

Ujang, N. & Zakariya, K. (2015a). *The notion of place, place meaning and identity in urban regeneration*. Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences, 170**,** 709-717.

Ujang, N. & Zakariya, K. (2015b). *Place attachment and the value of place in the life of the users*. Procedia-Social and Behavioral Sciences, 168**,** 373-380.

Urry, J. (1995). *Consuming places*, Psychology Press.

Uzzell, D. & Romice, O. (2008). *Analysing environmental experiences1*.

Vignoles, V. L., Chryssochoou, X. & Breakwell, G. M. (2000). *The distinctiveness principle: Identity, meaning, and the bounds of cultural relativity*. Personality and Social Psychology Review, 4**,** 337-354.

Wallen, D. C. (2006). *A critical and historical case study of experience design: Lynchian cognitive mapping and situationist psychogeography.* Iowa State University.

Wessel, G. (2012). *From place to nonplace: A case study of social media and contemporary food trucks*. Journal of Urban Design, 17**,** 511-531.

Williams, D. R., Patterson, M. E., Roggenbuck, J. W. & Watson, A. E. (1992). *Beyond the commodity metaphor: Examining emotional and symbolic attachment to place*. Leisure Sciences, 14**,** 29-46.

Williams, D. R. & Roggenbuck, J. W. (Year) Published. *Measuring place attachment: Some preliminary results*. NRPA Symposium on Leisure Research, San Antonio, TX, 1989.

Williams, D. R. & Vaske, J. J. (2003). *The measurement of place attachment: Validity and generalizability of a psychometric approach*. Forest science, 49**,** 830-840.

Worskett, R. (1969). *The character of towns: An approach to conservation*, Architectural Press London.

Wynveen, C. J., Kyle, G. T. & Sutton, S. G. (2012). *Natural area visitors' place meaning and place attachment ascribed to a marine setting*. Journal of Environmental Psychology, 32**,** 287-296.

Yin, R. K. (2009). *Case study research: Design and methods*, sage.

Zeisel, J. (1984). *Inquiry by design: Tools for environment behavior research,* UK, USA and Canada, The Press Syndicate of the University of Cambridge.

QUESTIONNAIRE: Place Identity: Case Study Misurata, Libya	The University of Nottingham

This survey is part of a research conducted by myself for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy at the University of Nottingham, United Kingdom. The main aim of this study is to find out how the residents of Misurata city centre perceived their physical environment and the meanings and feelings attached to the place. As you are one of the Misurata city's residents, you have been selected randomly to take part in the survey, if you would like. This is would like be really appreciated if you could spare some time in answering these questions. If you need some clarification on how to answer the question or need some clarification for some words to be understood, please do so then. After the questionnaire had done, there will be the second part of this inquiry, which is the in-depth interview. If you are willing to participate in this task as well, please provide your contacts details in the end of this questionnaire. Accordingly, we can arrange a suitable an appointment for the interview.

Interview No	Date	Time	Place/Location
………………….	/ /	:	………………………

A	PERSONAL INFORMATION

Gender: ☐ Male ☐ Female	Age:………………Year	Educational level:…………………	Occupation:………………

How long have you lived in Misurata city?

☐ Since birth   ☐ Other (please specify)……………………

B	PLACE ENGAGEMENT
01	**What is your main <u>purpose</u> of <u>going</u> to this place?**
	☐ Shopping ☐ Entertaining ☐ Visiting ☐ Business ☐ Meeting friends ☐ Others (please ☐ Working specify):……………………………… ☐ Leisure activity
02	**How <u>frequent</u> is your <u>visit</u> to this place?**
	☐ everyday ☐ 2 or 3 times a month ☐ At least once a week ☐ Others (please ☐ At least once a month specify):………………………………
03	**What is the main <u>attraction</u> of this place?**
	☐ All the major stores are located here ☐ Most old traditional market is located here ☐ The activities occurred here ☐ The public facilities ☐ landscape features (e.g. gardens, open spaces) ☐ Others (please specify):…………………………….

04	**Why is this place <u>favourite</u> of you?**	
	☐ Variety of activities ☐ Strategically located ☐ Excellent facilities	☐ Accessible place ☐ The shopping options ☐ Others (Please specify):…………………………
05	**Name the place or places that you think the most familiar place to you.**	
	(1)………………………………. 2) …………………………………… 3) ………………………………………	
06	**What <u>types</u> of shops do you <u>frequently visit</u>?**	
	☐ Shopping centres ☐ Coffee shops ☐ Traditional shopping area	☐ Al Nasser Square ☐ Others (Please specify):…………………….
07	**What are the most places or streets that you <u>feel comfortable</u> when you are being within than any other places in the Town centre of Misurata?**	
	☐ Tripoli Street ☐ Benghazi Street ☐ Abdallah Garieb Street ☐ Sana Street ☐ Traditional area ☐ Moklak Market	☐ Coffee shops ☐ Al Hoot Square ☐ Al Nasser Square ☐ The Central Garden ☐ Al Lefah market ☐ Others (Please specify):………………………

C	**PERCEIVING PHYSICAL ENVIRONMENT**
08	**Which is street/ place, do you find to be the most distinctive in Misurata town centre?** (1)…………………………………………………………………; (2)…………………………………………………………………; (3)……………………………………………………………….
09	**Which is street/ place of the above, do you find to be the most distinctive in Misurata town centre?** ………………………………………………………………………
10	**Why is it distinctive or unique to you?**
	☐ The name of the street or the place ☐ Length of the street ☐ Activities occurred here ☐ Historical significance ☐ Row of interesting buildings line up along the street ☐ Others (please specify):…………………………….
11	**Why are the buildings you mentioned are unique to you?**

11	☐ Decorations ☐ Height ☐ Scale and size ☐ Architectural style (façade design) ☐ Location	☐ Function (use) ☐ Colour ☐ Building material ☐ Historical significance ☐ Others (Please specify):………………………
12	**Name the place or places that you think the most familiar place to you.**	
	(1)………………………………. 2) …………………………………… 3) ………………………………………	

13	**What <u>types</u> of shops do you <u>frequently visit</u>?**	
	☐ Shopping centres ☐ Coffee shops ☐ Traditional shopping area	☐ Al Nasser Square ☐ Others (Please specify):…………………….
14	**What are the most places or streets that you <u>feel comfortable</u> when you are being within than any other places in the Town centre of Misurata?**	
	☐ Tripoli Street ☐ Benghazi Street ☐ Abdallah Garieb Street ☐ Sana Street ☐ Traditional area ☐ Moklak Market	☐ Coffee shops ☐ Al Hoot Square ☐ Al Nasser Square ☐ The Central Garden ☐ Al Lefah market ☐ Others (Please specify):………………………
15	**Could you please, name the most familiar place (streets, public spaces or buildings) to you?**	
	……………………………………………………………………………………	

D	**MEANINGS**
16	**Name the symbol that would you use to describe the city centre to the people.**
	……………………………………………………………………..
17	**Which part of the city centre of Misurata, do you think has a strong meaning?**
	…………………………………………………………………………
18	**Why do you think is meaningful?**
	……………………………………………………………………
19	**Do you agree that should be any changes in town centre of Misurata in future?**
	☐ yes ☐ No ☐ I am not sure ☐ If yes why do you think that? ………………………………………………………………………………….
20	**In case there is a decision to demolish some buildings in town centre for development, which of the buildings from the list below should be conserved?**

	☐ Al Lefah Market ☐ Al Sheikh Mosque ☐ Al Moklak Market ☐ The Historical Castle Building	☐ The Insurance Building ☐ Al Alee Mosque ☐ Traditional area ☐ Others (Please specify):…………………….
21	**Why do you think these buildings should be conserved?**	
	…………………………………………………………………………………	

22	**In your opinion, what should be considered in future to secure the identity of city centre of Misurata?**				
	………………………………………………………………				

	Please indicate to what extent each statement below describes your feeling about the town centre of Misurata:	**Strongly Agree**	**Slightly Agree**	**Neither**	**Slightly Disagree**	**Strongly Disagree**
23	The best place for earning money	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
24	This place means a lot to me	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
25	The modern buildings more meaningful than traditional area in city centre of Misurata	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
26	Appropriate for my lifestyle	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
27	Appropriate with my cultural background	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
28	The place recall me a lot of memories	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
29	Others (please specify):………………………………					

	EMOTIONAL BOND (SENSE OF ATTACHMENT): **Please indicate to what extent each statement below describes your feeling about the town centre of Misurata:**	**Strongly Agree**	**Slightly Agree**	**Neither**	**Slightly Disagree**	**Strongly Disagree**
30	I am very attached to Misurata	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
31	I am very attached to the area where I am live more than to the city centre	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
32	I have positive impression about this place	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
33	Modern buildings recently built in the centre of the city give me a sense of pride	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
34	I am satisfying when I being within city centre more than other places in the city.	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
35	I feel secure being in this place	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
36	I prefer to spend time here for leisure	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
37	I feel that I am part of this place	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
38	I am very attached to traditional area more than contemporary one	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
39	I don't have any intention to move out from this city	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
40	I feel commitment toward society	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
41	If there is any other reasons please specify:……………………………					

	REASON FOR ATTACHMENT: **Any of the following situations do you like in the city of Misurata in social terms, which in turn gives you a reason for feeling proud to belong to the city of Misurata?**	**Strongly Agree**	**Slightly Agree**	**Neither**	**Slightly Disagree**	**Strongly Disagree**
42	I was born and grew up here	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
43	This city has a strong social cohesion	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
44	A conservative society	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
45	Because of the security and safety	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐

46	The historical background and events of this city	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
47	If there is any other reasons please specify:……………………………					

	REASON FOR ATTACHMENT: **Any of the following situations do you like in the city of Misurata (physical features)?**	**Strongly Agree**	**Slightly Agree**	**Neither**	**Slightly Disagree**	**Strongly Disagree**
48	Clean and organised place	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
49	It has modern shopping centres	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
50	Easy to move and accessible place	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
51	Most of the traditional shops are situated here	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
52	It has an attractive landscape	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
53	Has kind of privacy between men and women in shopping areas and streets	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
54	Have several modern architectural buildings	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
55	It has major streets and public spaces	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
56	It has attractive façade of most its major streets	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
57	It has built heritage	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
58	If there are any other reasons please specify:……………………………					

	REASON FOR ATTACHMENT **Any of the following situations do you like in the city of Misurata (Activity & Function)?**	**Strongly Agree**	**Slightly Agree**	**Neither**	**Slightly Disagree**	**Strongly Disagree**
59	The most lively spot in Misurata city	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
60	Many temporarily activities occurred in this area	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
61	All goods needed are existing here	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
62	Good public facilities are provided here	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
63	It is the best place for shopping activities	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
64	Well-known as centre for local and traditional products/goods	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
65	This place provides many choices of variety of prices and goods	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
66	It has street vendors	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
67	Comfortable space to sit and relax	☐	☐	☐	☐	☐
68	If there are any other reasons please specify:……………………………					

Do you agree to take a part of the interview, which takes time around 45 minutes?
☐ Yes
☐ No

If yes, please provide us with your contact number or email address here:………………………………

Thank you very much for your time and cooperation.

APPENDIX B: Interview Outline

October 2014	PhD INTERVIEW: PLACE IDENTITY: CASE STUDY MISURATA CITY CENTER.	The University of Nottingham

This interview aims to examine the place identity of Misurata as perceived and felt by its residents. It is the empirical part of a doctoral research conducted in the Department of Architecture of the University of Nottingham and funded by the Libyan Government.

Interviewee name:
Age:
Gender:
Position:
The level of education:
The length of residence in Misurata:

PERCEPTION	o When you think of the city centre, what is the first thing that comes to mind, which can symbolise the word Misurata? o How would to describe the city centre in terms of physical appearance? o Could you openly explain the elements of the city centre, that you think the most memorable and identifiable? o Can you recognise yourself in city centre if your eyes were blankness? If so which part most recognisable part, and how you can find orient yourself? If not can you explain why? o Can you identify the most distinctive features in the city centre; explain how you think these elements are important for you?
MEANINGS	o Do you have a particular specialty area or place in the city centre that meant a lot for you? Alternatively, you can say this place represent me. Why do you think so? o If you have a visitor(s) from outside the city or country, where you would like to show him in the city in which you think will excite him or her. Why would you choose this place/ street/ building/ shops/ area? o Which places do you dislike and think is ugly or has a negative feeling with them? Why do you dislike it?
ATTACHMENT	o How would you describe your attachment to Misurata, and what the most thing that evokes your emotional bond the city? o What the most part in the city centre you feel comfort/ satisfy more than other places; please tell me about your experience in that place? o What the most places or buildings in the city centre do you think to represent you? And why? o What the most places that you feel engaged when you are being in it? And why?

APPENDIX C: Ethics Committee Reviewer Decision

This form must be completed by each reviewer. Each application will be reviewed by two members of the ethics committee. Reviews may be completed electronically and sent to the Faculty ethics administrator (Jo Deeley) from a University of Nottingham email address, or may be completed in paper form and delivered to the Faculty of Engineering Research Office.

Applicant full name   Ibrahim Shinbira
Reviewed by:

  Name   Sue Cobb & Alex Lang

  Signature (paper based only)   ……………………………….……………………………………………………………

  Date ………29.07.14…………………………………

- [x] Approval awarded - no changes required

- [ ] Approval awarded - subject to required changes (see comments below)

- [ ] Approval pending - further information & resubmission required (see comments)

- [ ] Approval declined – reasons given below

Comments:

I'm happy with the changes. Happy with the changes made so you can approve it.

Please note:
1. The approval only covers the participants and trials specified on the form and further approval must be requested for any repetition or extension to the investigation.
2. The approval covers the ethical requirements for the techniques and procedures described in the protocol but does not replace a safety or risk assessment.
3. Approval is not intended to convey any judgement on the quality of the research, experimental design or techniques.
4. Normally, all queries raised by reviewers should be addressed. In the case of conflicting or incomplete views, the ethics committee chair will review the comments and relay these to the applicant via email. All email correspondence related to the application must be copied to the Faculty research ethics administrator.

Any problems which arise during the course of the investigation must be reported to the Faculty Research Ethics Committee.

APPENDIX D: Research Participant Consent Form

Title of the Study: **Place Identity: A Case Study of Misurata, Libya.**
The University of Nottingham

Name of the Researcher: Ibrahim Abdallah Shinbira

Please tick the boxes as appropriate

1. I confirm that I have read and understand the information sheet for the above study. I have had the opportunity to consider the information, ask questions and have had these answered satisfactorily.
2. I understand that my participation is voluntary and that I am free to withdraw at any time, without giving any reason.
3. I understand that I have the right not to answer particular questions if I consider them to be sensitive.
4. I give my consent for my data to be used as it has been explained in the information sheet.
5. I agree to allow my interview statements to be published and to be attributed to the researcher's organisation (University of Nottingham).
6. I understand that the research findings, including the comments/data I provide in the interview, may be published as a PhD thesis, academic conference papers, journal articles and other academic publication/ dissemination channels.
7. I understand if the academic findings are to be published in other places, for example, media articles, no specific references to individual interviewees will be made.
8. I agree to take part in the above study.

_____   _____   _____
 Name of the Participant   Date   Signature
_____   _____   _____
Researcher   Date   Signature
- Copy for participant
- Copy for Researcher

Title of the Study: **Place Identity: A Case Study of Misurata, Libya.**   The University of Nottingham

Name of the Researcher: Ibrahim Abdallah Shinbira

Please tick the boxes as appropriate

1. I confirm that I have read and understand the information sheet for the above ☐
    study. I have had the opportunity to consider the information, ask questions
    and have had these answered satisfactorily.
2. I understand that my participation is voluntary and that I am free to withdraw ☐
    at any time, without giving any reason.
3. I could take a break at any time during the interview. ☐
4. I understand that I have the right not to answer particular questions if I ☐
    consider them to be sensitive.
5. I give my consent for the interview to be audio-recorded as described in ☐
    the information sheet.
6. I give my consent for my data to be used as it has been explained in the ☐
    information sheet.
7. I agree to allow my interview statements to be published and to be ☐
    attributed to the researcher's organisation (University of Nottingham).
    I also agree to being identified by position (please choose):
    Yes ☐   No ☐

    (Please note that: if your position title might easily identify your name, you can
    disagree to be identified by it).
8. I understand that the research findings, including the comments/data I ☐
    provide in the interview, may be published as a PhD thesis, academic
    conference papers, journal articles and other academic publication/
    dissemination channels.
9. I understand if the academic findings are to be published in other places, ☐
    for example, media articles, no specific references to individual
    interviewees will be made.
10. I agree to take part in the above study. ☐

_____   _____   _____
 Name of the Participant   Date   Signature
_____   _____   _____
Researcher   Date   Signature
  • Copy for participant
  • Copy for Researcher

October, 2014	**PhD INTERVIEW: PLACE IDENTITY: CASE STUDY MISURATA CITY CENTER.**	The University of Nottingham

Participant name: _____ Age: _____ gender: _____Length of Residence in

Misurata: _____Occupation:_____

Educational Level: _____

In this plank paper (A4 size), could you please draw a map of the city centre of Misurata so that a visitor could find his way. List distinctive parts of the city. Distinctive parts might be a street, a building, a section, or architecture features, which you feel has special characteristics that make it worthy of being pointed out to a person who wants to become more familiar with the city.

هل بالامكان أن ترسم خريطة مركز مدينة مصراتة على ورقة بحيث يمكن لزائر ما بحيث يجد طريقه (رسم كروكي). اذكر الاشياء المميز بالمدينة التي تشعرك ان لديها خصائص والتي تعتبر انها مولفة بالمدينة. هذه الاشياء قد يكون شوارع، مباني، تقاطعات، تفاصيل معمارية، وغيرها من المعالم التي حسب رايك انها لها ارتباط بطابع المدينة.

ترسل على الاميل:

shinbira@yahoo.com او عمل اسكان على شكل صورة وترسل على الفيس بوك

https://www.facebook.com/ibrahim.shinbira

وجزاكم الله خيرا على تعاونكم...

APPENDIX F: Interview Analysis

Coding processes, subthemes emerged from the data.

Qualities	
Accessibility	
Architectural details	
Atmosphere	
Beauty	
Behaviour	
Car park	
Comfort	
Critical events	
Crowded	
Design	
Differences	
Diversity	
Enjoyable	
Entering point	
Expression	
Facility	
Feeling	
Flexibility	
Formality and informality	
Future suggestions	
Historical significance	
Insideness	
Leisure	
Location	
Meaningful	
Meeting	
Mobility	
Modernity	
Needs	
Old & new	
Options	
Originality	
Outsideness	
Past memories	
Planning policy	
Popularity	
Pride	
Religious significance	
Sounds	
Spatial setting	
Time preference	
Tradition	
Visiting frequency	
Vitality	
Walkablity	

Identifying main themes and sub themes emerging from the data by using Nvivo 10 software.

APPENDIX G: Observation

Visual observation note form

Place Identity: A Case Study of Misurata, Libya.

The University of Nottingham

Zone No: ………………………………...

Area name: …………………………………………………………

Date	
Time/Period	
Temperature/Wind	
Weather condition	

List of Observation

Category	Data	Comments
People Movement	→ Intensive → Frequent - - -> Less Frequent	
Activities	● Gathering/meeting ▲ Standing ■ Sitting/chatting/ eating ◆ Shopping/ selling	
Gender	◆ Male ⧗ Female	
Interactions	Interactive/engagement area Less Interactive/engagement area	
Façade engagements		
Façade interactive points and focal points	- - - - Interactive façade ……… Less interactive façade → Focal points	

Activity and use analysis

Most active and vital places in the city centre. (Observation, 2014).

Tripoli Street (activities analysis). (Observation,

Activity and behavioural analysis. Observation, (2014).

Night activities around the traditional area during Ramadan before Eid party reflect the highest engagement with place. (Observation, 2014).

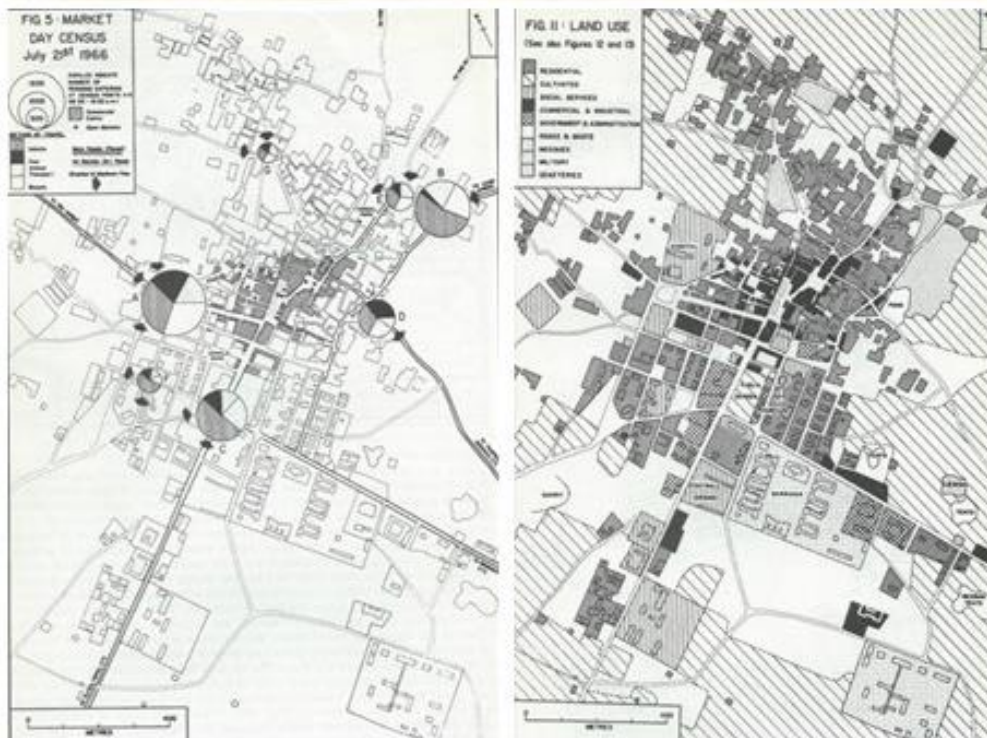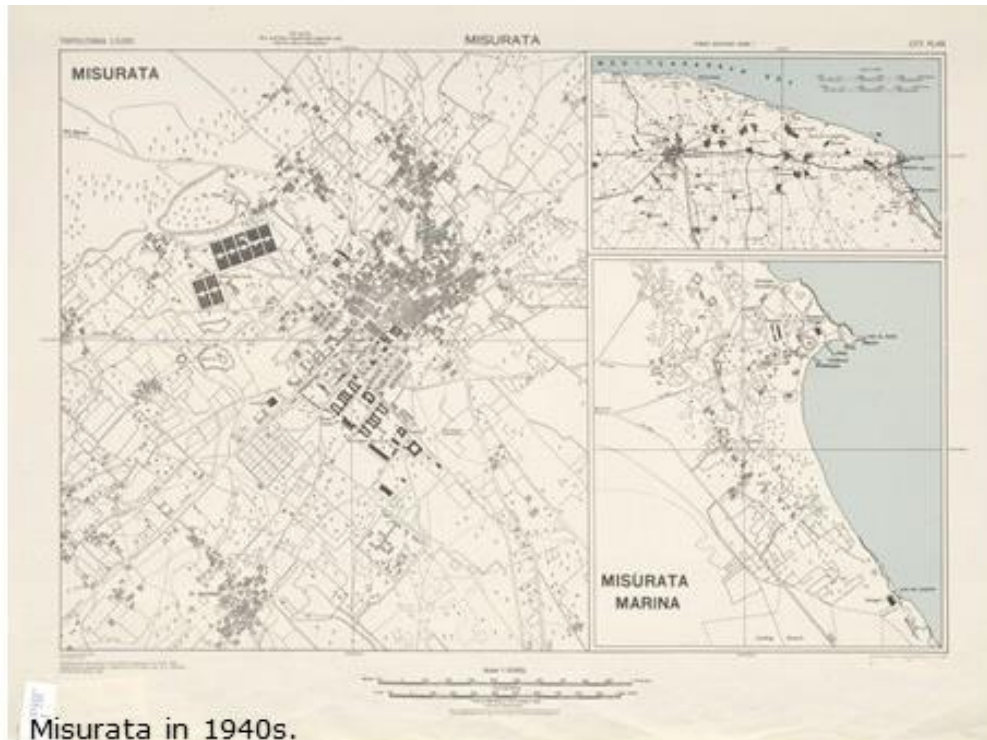Arial view of Al Nasser Square and Traditional area. (Observation, 2014).

Al Hoot Square at 6:00 am. (Observation, 2014).

Family enjoying shopping in Al Hilal Street at nighttime. (Observation, 2014).

APPENDIX K: Historical Context of Misurata City Centre

Misurata in 1940s.
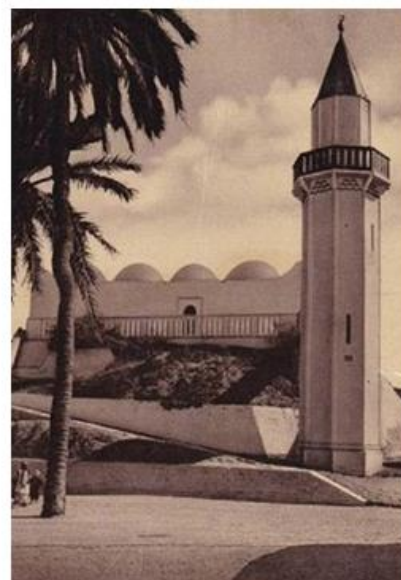

Misurata in 1960s. Source: (Blake, 1968).

Al Nasser Square as interaction place and weekly market 1966 Source: (Blake, 1968).

The old vegetable market as appeared in 1960s nerbay Al Lefah Marekt. Source: (Blake, 1968).

Street of Sheikh Jama. Source: (Blake, 1968).

Al Alee Jama 1942. Source (Blake, 1968).